

CORRESPONDENCE AND PAPERS

CONNECTED WITH

RECENT OCCURRENCES

IN THE

NORTH-WEST TERRITORIES.

.....
PRINTED BY ORDER OF PARLIAMENT.
.....

Canada. Session 1870. Sessional Papers no. 12.



OTTAWA:

PRINTED BY I. B. TAYLOR, 29, 31 AND 33, RIDEAU STREET.

1870.

PAAP

FC

3214

C3C6

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

Correspondence and Papers connected with recent occurrences in the North-West Territories.

No. of Despatch.	Date.	Date of Reception.	SUBJECT.	Page.
	1869.		<i>Clerk of Privy Council to Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces.</i>	
	September 28		Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council, recommending appointment of Hon. William McDougall, C.B., as Lieut.-Governor North-West Territories	1
			<i>Clerk of Privy Council to Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces.</i>	
	September 28		Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General, containing instructions to Hon. William Mc.Dougall.	1
			<i>Under Secretary of State for Provinces to Hon. William McDougall, C.B.</i>	
	September 28		Transmitting Copy of an Order of His Excellency the Governor General in Council.	1
			<i>Under Secretary of State for Provinces to Hon. William McDougall, C.B.</i>	
	September 28		Transmitting Letter of Instructions as Lieut.-Governor	2
			<i>Commission appointing Hon. William McDougall, C.B.</i>	
	September 29		After a certain day to be named Lieut.-Governor of the North-West Territories	4
			<i>Under Secretary of State to Hon. William McDougall.</i>	
	October 11		Transmitting Three Commissions under the Great Seal, and One Commission under His Excellency's Privy Seal	3
			<i>Hon. William McDougall to Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces.</i>	
995	October 31	November 19	Reporting his Arrival at H. B. Post, Pembina, detailing reasons for remaining there, and covering Copies of Documents, marked as under:—	5
	Oct. 11 to 22		"A." J. S. Dennis. Memo. of facts and circumstances connected with active opposition of French Half-Breeds in Red River Settlement, to prosecution of Government Surveys	7
	October 15		"B." William Cowan to Colonel Dennis. Advising failure of H. B. Authorities to get over the opposition to Surveys.	9
			"C." W. McTavish to Colonel Dennis. On the situation	9

TABLE OF CONTENTS—Correspondence and Papers, &c.—Continued.

No. of Despatch.	Date.	Date of Reception.	SUBJECT.	Page.
	1869.	1869.	October 22.. "D." Deposition of ———, reciting the fact of men being under arms to prevent the entrance of Governor McDougall, and advising prompt action on part of Authorities	10
			October 21.. "E." Warning to Mr. McDougall not to enter the North-West Territories. (Signed, by Order, JOHN BRUCE, President; LOUIS RIEL, Secretary.) ..	11
			October 27.. "F." Despatch from Colonel Dennis on State of Public Opinion	11
			October 27.. "FF." Note from Colonel Dennis, enclosing above	13
			October 31.. "G." Hon. William McDougall to Capt. Cameron, R.A. discountenancing his attempt to proceed to Fort Garry	14
<i>Hon. William McDougall to Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces.</i>				
November 4.	November 20		Reporting his Expulsion from the North-West Territories	15
<i>Hon. William McDougall to Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces.</i>				
November 5.	November 26		Giving details of events which prevented him remaining in the North-West Territories, and enclosing Copies of following Documents:—	17
		October 30.. "A."	Mr. McLavish to Hon. William McDougall. Reviewing situation of affairs at Fort Garry, and suggesting three courses for meeting the difficulty	23
		Oct. 28 to 31	"B" J. S. Dennis. Statement of facts and circumstances connected with outbreak	25
	November 27	October 27.. "C"	Address to Colonel Dennis from British residents in Winnipeg, offering to escort Gov. McDougall into the Settlement	27
		November 3.	"E." J. A. N. Provencher. Report of his mission to Fort Garry	27
		November 2.	"F." Hon. William McDougall to Gov. McLavish. Acknowledging receipt of letter of 30th ult., and urging him to issue a Proclamation explaining Provisions of late Imperial Act respecting the Territory, and the authority under which the new Government will exercise its power, and warning malcontents	29
		November 4.	"G." Hon. William McDougall to Gov. McLavish. Recounting events which led to his expulsion from Territory	29
		November 5.	"H." Letter, supposed to be from Dr. Schultz, and others, at Winnipeg, confirming story of surrender of Fort Garry, and speaking of evident complicity of H. B. Co.'s officials with rebels, and urging that a Proclamation should be issued	31
		November 7.	"I." Hon. William McDougall to Gov. McLavish. Informing him that he had been compelled to leave the Territory, and referring to contents of former letters	31
<i>Hon. William McDougall to Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces.</i>				
November 9.			Reporting measures taken for Extension of Telegraph from Minnesota to Fort Garry, and covering copies of Correspondence on the subject, marked:—	33

TABLE OF CONTENTS.—Correspondence and Papers, &c.—Continued.

No. of Despatch.	Date.	Date of Reception.	SUBJECT.	Page.
	1869.	1869.	October 1. "A." Z. G. Simmons, Pres. N. W. Telegraph Co., to Hon. William McDougall. Proposition for connecting Fort Garry, by Telegraph, with the lines of the North-Western Telegraph Co. in Minnesota	35
			October 11. "B." Hon. William McDougall to Z. G. Simmons. Accepting his proposal, with modifications and additions	35
			"BB." Hon. William McDougall to Z. G. Simmons. Memo. endorsed on above as to Duty on Wire	36
			October 13. "C." Hon. William McDougall to Z. G. Simmons. Enclosing copy of above, and proposing rebate of 25 per cent. on official Telegraphs to Sarnia or Detroit	36
			October 27. "E." Z. G. Simmons to Hon. William McDougall. Enclosing copy of Telegram (marked as in margin F.), and agreeing to rebate of 25 per cent.	37
			October 15. "F." Telegram. Referred to above	37
			<i>Alexander Begg to Hon. Minister of Customs.</i>	
	November 11		Announcing his arrival at Pembina, and asking for Remittances	32
			<i>Hon. William McDougall to Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces.</i>	
1036	Nov. 13 & 14	December 4.	Informing His Excellency that he is still without any further communication from the Hudson Bay authorities at Fort Garry, and commenting upon their action, and enclosing copies of Documents, marked:—	37
			November 6 "A" Public Notice to the Inhabitants of Rupert's Land, inviting them to send representatives to Rebel Council, to be held at Fort Garry on 16th November.—(Signed) LOUIS RIEL, Sec.	39
			November 9. "B" Letter, supposed to be from Mr. Snow, advising that a "Call" had been made by Riel.	39
			November 8. "C" Letter from Mr. Mair, on state of affairs at Fort Garry.	39
			November 11 "D" Letter from "Young Englishman" to Mr. Begg on the same subject.	40
			November 12 "E" Letter to Col. Dennis, from "Friends of Canada" apprising him of state of things in Rebel ranks	40
			<i>W. E. Sandford to Hon. Mr. Howe.</i>	
	November 18		Detailing events which occurred after Mr. Howe's leaving Fort Garry, and explaining the telegraph report of Mr. McDougall's arrival there, and volunteering to come down to Ottawa	15
	November 20		Hon. Mr. Howe's telegraph in reply	16
			<i>Hon. Joseph Howe, S.S. for Pro. to Hon. W. McDougall.</i>	
	November 19	December 6	Acknowledging receipt of despatch of 31st ult., and expressing approval of Mr. McDougall's conduct, and instructing him to inform Governor McTavish that he is only proceeding to Fort Garry on the assumed consent of the Company and its Officers.	14

TABLE OF CONTENTS.—Correspondence and Papers, &c.—Continued.

No. of Despatch.	Date.	Date of Reception.	SUBJECT.	Page.
	1869.	1869.		
	November 19		Hon. Joseph Howe to Mr. Wheelock, asking him to forward the above by a safe hand.....	16
			Telegram.....	17
			Hon. Joseph Howe to Mr. Wheelock, St. Paul, Minnesota, advising him that letter has been mailed to his address, and asking him to telegraph authentic news from Frontier.....	17
			<i>Hon. William McDougall to Hon. Sec. State for Provinces.</i>	
	November 20	December 7	On situation of affairs at Red River, and enclosing copies of following documents:—	50
		November 9	“A” Letter from Governor McTavish acknowledging receipt of letters dated 2nd and 4th instant, respecting non-issue of Proclamation, criticising action of Canadian Government in relation to change of constitution; of the capture of Fort Garry, and advising Mr. McDougall's return to Canada.....	52
		17 to 19	“B” Correspondence between “Loyalists” in town of Winnipeg, and Col. Dennis.....	54
			“C” Copy of “Protest” or “Appeal” of these “Loyalists” to Governor McTavish, and of the Proclamation he was at last thereby induced to issue.....	56
			<i>D. A. Smith to Hon. Secretary State for Canada.</i>	
	November 24		Enclosing extracts from a letter from Governor McTavish, and stating that the Hudson Bay Co. are anxious to induce the Red River people to allow the surveys to be proceeded with, and offering the assurance that the Governor, Factors, and Officers generally, will use their best efforts to restore and maintain order throughout the Territory.....	46
		October 12	Extract from a letter from Governor McTavish to W. G. Smith, reporting the disturbance between Mr. Snow and men employed on the road to the Lake of the Woods, and that Mr. Dennis's surveying party had been stopped.....	47
			<i>Under Secretary of State for Canada to Donald A. Smith, Esq.</i>	
	November 26		Acknowledging receipt of above, and expressing acknowledgment of the Dominion Government for the assurance therein contained....	47
			<i>Hon. William McDougall to Hon. Sec. State for Provinces.</i>	
	November 25	December 16	Informing him of the means taken to insure the safety of arms and ammunition stored at Georgetown; that he had received a private note from Governor McTavish, saying, that, he had issued a Proclamation; also, covering copies of following documents:—	59
		Nov. 4, to 22	Notes by Major Wallace of events which transpired at Fort Garry and neighbourhood between these dates.....	59
		November 22	“A” Hon. William McDougall to General Hart, or Officer commanding at Fort Abercrombie, requesting that the arms and ammunition belonging to the Government of Canada at Georgetown, may be allowed to be stored in Fort Abercrombie.....	63

TABLE OF CONTENTS.—Correspondence and Papers, &c.—Continued.

No. of Despatch.	Date.	Date of Reception.	SUBJECT.	Page.
1042	1869. November 26	1869.	Extract from a letter addressed to the Sec. State for Provinces, by a gentleman resident at St. Paul, touching position of affairs at Red River..... <i>Hon. Mr. Howe, S. S. for Pro. to Hon. Wm. McDougall.</i>	41
	November 29	December 16	Acknowledging receipt of despatches of 5th and 7th November, and stating that they had at once been laid before Governor General in Council, that the Governor General is still in telegraphic communication with the Secretary of State, and ordering him to remain at Pembina for the present..... <i>Hon. William McDougall to Hon. Sec. State for Provinces.</i>	32
	November 29	December 15	Reporting that he is still at Pembina, and the measures he has taken to announce the transfer of authority on 1st December, and detailing events that had taken place in his vicinity, and enclosing copies of following documents:— November 24 "A" D. A. Grant to Col. Dennis, relating occurrences relative to Government property stored at Dr. Schultz's, and asking instructions from Governor how to act..... November 25 "B" Col. Dennis to D. A. Grant, Esq., reply to above, and conveying Mr. McDougall's orders, Nos. 1, 2, 3 and 4..... November 24 "C" Hon. Wm. McDougall to Governor McTavish, requesting him if the proposal to store Government property in Stone Fort is feasible, to give required authority..... <i>Hon. William McDougall to Hon. Secretary State for Provinces.</i>	64 66 67 68
	December 2.	December 18	Detailing events that have occurred since 29th ult. :—and enclosing copies of documents as under:— "A" From "Loyal subjects of the British Crown" asking for official information of the position of affairs, and what the intentions of the Canadian Government are?..... December 2. "B" Proclamation, by His Excellency Governor McDougall, commanding public officers and functionaries to continue in the execution of their several offices..... November 21..... Extracts from St. Paul "Daily Press" referred to in above letter..... <i>Hon. Secretary State for Provinces to the Very Reverend Grand Vicar Mr. Thibault.</i>	69 71 71 72
	December 4.		Conveying instructions for his guidance, in representing to the people of the Hudson Bay Territory, the views and policy of the Canadian Government..... <i>Hon. William McDougall to Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces.</i>	45
	December 6.	December 24	Acknowledging receipt of despatch of 19th ult., stating his conviction that the Rebel Government would have been inaugurated during the interregnum which must have occurred; and that we would have had to fight, at a much later date, a very different enemy from	

TABLE OF CONTENTS.—Correspondence and Papers, &c.—Continued.

No. of Despatch.	Date.	Date of Reception.	SUBJECT.	Page.
	1869.	1869.	that which now melts away before a "Proclamation" and a "Conservator of the Peace," and enclosing copies of following documents:—	
			December 2. "2 A" Col. Dennis' first report, from Head Quarters at Stone Fort.....	75
			December 2. "2 B" Letter, enclosing copy of resolutions passed by French delegates at Riel's Council, embodying rights of insurgents.....	77
			"2 C" Not sent down, being of a private character.	79
			November 21 "2 D" Proposition to Mr. McDougall, from St. Paul "Daily Pioneer".....	80
			<i>Hon. Secretary State for Provinces to Hon. William McDougall.</i>	
	December 7.		Acknowledging receipt of despatch of 13th ult., with enclosures, and advising him that the Very Reverend Mr. Thibault and Mr. Charles De Salaberry proceed to Fort Garry, to assist in restoring order; to be followed by Mr. D. A. Smith—enclosing an Order in Council on the subject of Custom Duties [page 44], and repeating in an authoritative form, the instructions given him before leaving Ottawa.....	42
			<i>Hon. Secretary State for Provinces to Hon. William McDougall.</i>	
1611	December 7.		Acknowledging receipt of despatch of 20th November, with enclosures from Hudson Bay Company.....	58
			<i>Hon. Secretary State for Provinces to Hon. William McDougall.</i>	
	December 8.		Enclosing original Proclamation, issued by Governor General, by direct command of Her Majesty.....	43
	December 6.		Proclamation by Sir John Young, referred to above.....	44
			<i>Hon. William McDougall to Hon. Secretary State for Provinces.</i>	
	December 8.	December 25	Giving an account of interview with residents of Pembina, U. S., at Mr. Nelson's office, on the subject of employing Indians in quelling disturbances at Red River. Acknowledging receipt of note from General Hart, U. S. A.,—and enclosing copies of following documents:—	86
			December 8. "3 A" Hon. William McDougall to N. E. Nelson, Esq., Deputy Collector of Customs, Pembina, putting in writing the principal points of the conversation at the interview alluded to above.....	86
			"3 B" Translated Copy of a letter received by Mr. Provencher, supposed to be from R. C. Priest, at Scratching River.....	91
			December 8. "3 C" Letter to Col. Dennis forbidding the employment of Indians in the suppression of outbreak....	92
			<i>Hon. Secretary State for Provinces to Donald A. Smith, Esq., Montreal.</i>	
	December 10		Appointing him Government Commissioner to the North-West, and instructing him in the premises.....	48
			<i>Hon. Secretary State for Provinces to Hon. William McDougall.</i>	
	December 10		Enclosing copy of letter of instructions to Mr. Smith.....	48

TABLE OF CONTENTS.—Correspondence and Papers, &c.—Continued.

No. of Despatch.	Date.	Date of Reception.	SUBJECT.	Page.
	1869.	1869.	<i>Hon. Secretary State for Provinces to Hon. William McDougall.</i>	
	December 10		Calling attention to exposed situation in which the arms for government service at Red River, have been placed.....	58
			<i>Hon. Secretary State for Provinces to Hon. William McDougall.</i>	
	December 11		Authorizing him to contradict expressions said to have been used by him (the Secretary) in conversation with inhabitants of Hudson Bay Territory.....	58
			<i>Hon. Secretary State for Provinces to Hon. William McDougall.</i>	
	December 15		Acknowledging receipt of letter of 25th ult., and enclosures.....	63
			<i>Hon. William McDougall to Hon. Secretary State for Provinces.</i>	
	December 13	December 30	Informing him of the surprise and capture of Canadians at Dr. Schultz's, of the probable arrival of Riel at H. B. Post, Pembina, and enclosing copies of documents as under:—	92
	December 13		"4 A" W. B. McDougall's report of his interview with Mr. McKay.....	94
	December 13		"4 B" Hon. William McDougall to Louis Riel,—proposing an interview.....	95
			<i>H. P. Dwight to Hon. Sir John A. Macdonald.—Telegram.</i>	
	December 15		Informing him that Governor McTavish had been placed under arrest, and that Captain Cameron had been expelled.....	68
			<i>Hon. William McDougall to Hon. Secretary State for Provinces.</i>	
	December 16	1870. January 1	Acknowledging receipt of despatch of 29th ult., and giving account of events which justified him in returning to St. Paul,—and enclosing copies of documents as under:—	95
	December 9		"5 A" Letter from Col. Dennis enclosing record of proceedings under Commission.....	96
	December 9		"5 B." Letter from Col. Dennis, saying it is hopeless to expect to do anything until Spring.....	96
	December 8		"5 C." Letter from "Guide"—on state of public feeling at Red River.....	97
	December 16		"5 D." Hon. Wm. McDougall to Gov. McTavish announcing his intention of returning to St. Paul.....	97
	December 8		"5 E." Declaration of the People of Rupert's Land and the North-West.—(Signed) John Bruce, President, Louis Riel, Secretary.....	99
	December 9		"5 F." List of Rights.....	100
	December 9		"5 G." "Call" on the "loyal people" of the North-West Territories to lay down their arms; J. S. Dennis.....	101
			<i>Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces to Hon. William McDougall.</i>	
	December 17	December 25	Acknowledging receipt of despatch of 29th ult., and advising him that no notice had been received of the issue of the Queen's Proclamation,	

TABLE OF CONTENTS.—Correspondence and Papers, &c.—Continued.

No. of Despatch.	Date.	Date of Reception.	SUBJECT.	Page.
	1869.	1869.	or of the payment of the purchase money, and ordering him to abstain from any movement which might relieve the Governor and Officers of the Hudson Bay Territory of their responsibility.	69
			<i>J. A. Wheelock, to Hon. Joseph Howe.—Telegram.</i>	
	December 17		Report, that Col. Dennis and Governor McDougall had organized forces of Swamp and Sioux Indians.	74
			<i>Donald A. Smith, to Sir John A. Macdonald.—Telegram.</i>	
	December 17		Asking to be appointed to Council.	80
			<i>Sir John A. Macdonald to M. W. Kittson, Esq., St. Paul.—Telegram.</i>	
	December 17		Appointing Mr. Smith, as one of the Council of Territory.	81
			<i>Telegrams from H. P. Dwight to Sir John A. Macdonald.</i>	
	December 18		Report that Governor McDougall had raised Indians, and fearing that a collision had taken place.	75
	December 20		Announcing capture of Governor McDougall's agents and emissaries; 600 insurgents occupying Fort Garry.	81
	December 20		Report of McDougall having raised Indians discredited; insurgents not in right humor to listen to Governor McDougall.	81
	December 21		Forwarding letter from "W. M. D." dated Pembina, 9th December, 1869.	82
	December 21		Report, through insurgent sources, of the arrest of Schultz, Mair, Bown, and Ross.	82
	December 23		Copy of letter published in "Buffalo Express" touching movement of U. S. Troops.	83
			<i>James Ernatinger to Sir John A. Macdonald.</i>	
	December 20		Warning him of the consequences of McDougall entering N.-W. Territories under Sioux auspices.	83
			<i>Hon. Joseph Howe to James Ernatinger, Esq.</i>	
	December 27		Disclaiming any intention of employing Sioux.	83
			<i>Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces to Hon. William McDougall.</i>	
	December 24		Acknowledging receipt of despatch of 2nd December, assuring him that the grave occurrences he reports have occasioned great anxiety, and commenting upon his having used the Queen's name without Her authority.	83
			<i>Hon. William McDougall to Secretary of State for Provinces.</i>	
	1870.			
	January 1.		Acknowledging receipt, while on way to St. Paul, of despatches Nos. 1,602, 1,611, 1,608, 1,612, 1,618, 1,617, 1,620, 1,635.	101

TABLE OF CONTENTS.—Correspondence and Papers, &c.—Continued.

No. of Despatch.	Date.	Date of Reception.	SUBJECT.	Page.
	1870. January 14.		<i>H. P. Dwight to Sir John A. Macdonald.—Telegram.</i> Announcing arrival of Dr. Tupper and party at St. Cloud	83
	January 20.		<i>Hon. William McDougall to Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces.</i> Transmitting Report of Col. Dennis ("A. 8") and Documents connected therewith, and Colonel Dennis' final report (B. 8)	106
			Dec. 1 to 10 "A. 8" Col. Dennis' report of proceeding under commission, with copies of documents referred to therein, as under:—	106
			Dec. 4. "B" Letter from Gov. McTavish, enclosing orders for delivery of arms	114
			Dec. 4. "A 1" Order to Enrolled Canadians to withdraw from Winnipeg	114
			Dec. 4. "A 2" Order to put Canadians in Scotch Church, if Rev. Mr. Black is willing, and inquiring state of feeling in Scotch settlement	115
			Dec. 4. "A 3" Letter to Dr. Schultz on subject of government provision and disposition of enrolled Canadians	115
			Dec. 4. "A 4" Memo. given to Mr. James McKay, of proposition by which difficulties might be arranged	115
			Dec. 4. "E" Letter from Major Boulton, reporting that he is prepared to resist a strong attack	116
			"F" Letter from Dr. Schultz, account of interview with President Bruce	116
			Dec. 3. "G" Letter from James Carrie, Incum. Headingly Parish, enclosing copy of resolutions, and speaking of loyalty of parish	117
			"G H" Address from inhabitants of High Bluff to Hon. William McDougall	117
			Dec. 4. "I" Letter from Major Boulton, account of meeting at Kildonan School House, and of enrolling volunteers there	117
			Dec. 6. "K" Letter from Major Boulton, account of movement of rebels in town of Winnipeg	118
			Dec. 6. "K. 1" "Call" from Col. Dennis upon loyal men in N.W. Territories, to assist him in restoring public peace and order	119
			Dec. 6. "K. 2" To enrolled Canadians at Winnipeg, ordering them to leave the town	119
			Dec. 6. "K. 4" Note from James Ross advising no aggressive movement	120

TABLE OF CONTENTS.—Correspondence and Papers, &c.—Continued.

No. of Despatch.	Date.	Date of Reception.	SUBJECT.	Page.
	1870.		Dec. 6.. "K. 3" Reply to above, none to be made, while there is a satisfactory reason for delay.... 120 Dec. 9.. "L" Major Boulton's report of occurrences of past few days 120 Dec. 6.. "N" Letter from Bishop of Rupert's Land, advising delay, and confidence in the management of Canada..... 121 Dec. 7.. "O" Letter from Bishop of Rupert's Land, advising that no action should be taken, as the lives of prisoners might be sacrificed. Memo. from Archdeacon McLean concurring in above..... 122 Dec. 9.. "P" "Call" from Col. Dennis to loyal party to lay down their arms..... 122 "K 5" Note to E. B. Bannatyne, enclosing the above..... 120 "R" Not in original papers Dec. 8.. "S" Letter from Joseph Marion with message from Dease... 123 Service Roll signed by Red River force at Stone Fort, R. R. Settlement, 1st December, 1869..... 123 December 17| "B 8" Final Report of Colonel Dennis' proceedings..... 123 <i>Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces to Hon. William McDougall.</i>	
	January 24	.....	Asking for Copy of "Proclamation" and "Commission" to Colonel Dennis, issued on 1st December, 1869..... 102 <i>Hon. William McDougall to Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces.</i>	
	January 29	.....	Enclosing copies of "Proclamation" (A 9 p. 103) and Commission (B. 9, p. 104)..... 102 December 1| "A" 9 | Proclamation issued by Lt-Govr. McDougall... 103 December 1| "B" 9 | Commission to Col. Dennis..... 104 Commission referred to above.	
	January 28	.....	<i>Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces to Donald A. Smith, Esq., Fort Garry.</i> Enclosing Commission under Great Seal, appointing him Special Commissioner..... 49 <i>Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces to Hon. William McDougall.</i>	
	February 8	.....	Acknowledging receipt of letters under date, 14th, 20th, and 29th ult... 106 <i>Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces to the Very Rev. the Bishop of St. Boniface.</i>	
	February 16	.....	Thanking him, by command of His Excellency the Governor General, for the promptitude with which he placed his services at the dis-	

TABLE OF CONTENTS.—Correspondence and Papers, &c.—*Continued.*

No. of Despatch.	Date.	Date of Reception.	SUBJECT.	Page.
	1870.		posal of the Government, to aid in the repression of disturbances in the North-West, and enclosing copies of documents for his information	128
	February 19	.....	<p><i>J. S. Dennis, Esq., to Hon. Secretary of State for Provinces.</i></p> <p>Enclosing him copy of letter addressed to the Hon. Minister of Public Works (p. 126), and requesting that it should accompany papers on the North-West, should they be sent down to the House of Commons</p> <p>February 12|Letter to Minister of Public Works</p>	<p>125</p> <p>126</p>

TABLE OF CONTENTS OF ADDENDA.

No. of Despatches.	Date.	SUBJECT.	Page.
		DISTURBANCES AT RED RIVER.	
		<i>Secretary of State to Governor General.</i>	
7	1870. January 8	Acknowledging receipt of despatches referring to Minute of Privy Council of Canada (p. 20), and enclosing copies of correspondence on the subject	130
		<i>Sir Stafford Northcote to Sir F. Rogers.</i>	
	1869. December 28	Enclosing copies of communications for information of Lord Granville	131
		List of enclosures referred to above :— 1869.	
	November 2.	Extract of letter from Governor McTavish to W. G. Smith, Secretary. Hudson's Bay Company	133
	November 9.	Letter from Mr. McTavish to Mr. Smith	134
	November 23	Letter from Mr. McTavish to Mr. Smith	135
	October 25.	Minutes of Council of Assiniboine	135
	October 30.	Minutes of Council of Assiniboine	137
	November 16	Extract of a letter from Governor McTavish to W. G. Smith, Secretary	138
		<i>Sir Frederic Rogers to Sir Stafford Northcote.</i>	
	1870. January 8	Advising him that Lord Granville had received a Minute of the Privy Council of Canada, and informing him of contents thereof; also, of the opinion of law officers of the Crown in relation to the purchase-money deposited by Mr. Rose	131
	1869. December 16	Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council referred to above, and in Secretary of States letter of 8th January, 1870	141
		<i>Sir John Young to Lord Granville.</i>	
	November 23	Telegram—informing him that Mr. McDougall had been stopped on the way to Fort Garry by armed Half-breeds; who had also appointed a Provisional Committee of Government	138
		<i>Sir John Young to Lord Granville.</i>	
	November 26	Telegram—on the subject of Transfer of North-West Territories	139
		<i>Lord Granville to Sir John Young.</i>	
214	November 30	Reviewing the state of the North-West question	139
		—	
		PURCHASE OF NORTH-WEST TERRITORIES.—NEGOTIATIONS AND CORRESPONDENCE CONNECTED THEREWITH.	
	May 14.....	Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council,—advising that the accompanying Report of Delegates sent to England to negotiate for the acquisition, by Canada, of Rupert's Land and the North-West Territory, be approved and submitted for the consideration and sanction of Parliament	144

TABLE OF CONTENTS OF ADDENDA.—Continued.

No. of Despatch.	Date.	SUBJECT.	Page.
	1869.		
	May 8.....	Report of Delegates referred to above	144
	August 17..	Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council.—Concurring in the proposal of the Minister of Finance, relating to the provision of the purchase money—£300,000—of the Territory	145
	September 18	Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council.—Concurring in the recommendations of the Minister of Finance, relative to the Imperial Act for guaranteeing loan, £300,000	146
	September 18	Memo. of Finance Minister referred to above	146
	September 20	Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council.—Approving of the proposal of the Finance Minister, to pay the £300,000 payable to the Hudson's Bay Company, out of funds now in the hands of Canadian Government	147
	September 20	Memo. of Finance Minister referred to above	147
	October 2...	Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council.—Approving of the recommendation of the Minister of Justice, that the Honorable John Rose be requested to act in London on behalf of the Canadian Government, on the several matters referred to in his memo.	149
	Sept. 30	Memo. of Minister of Justice referred to above	149
	Nov. 16	Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council,—Advising immediate payment of the purchase money of North-West Territories, and that it is inexpedient to place a new loan on the Market at present	150
		<i>Mr. Stansfeld to Under Secretary of State.</i>	
	Nov. 22	Approval of Lords Commissioners of Her Majesty's Treasury, of the manner in which it is proposed to raise the sum of £300,000, and of the terms of the Bond or Debenture,—That Mr. Rose had been informed that my Lords are prepared to guarantee interest at 4% on such sum, on condition of proof being afforded that such sum has been paid over to the Hudson's Bay Company	151
		<i>Secretary of State to Sir John Young.</i>	
215	Dec. 30.....	Enclosing Copies of correspondence with the Board of Treasury, relating to Loan of £300,000.....	150
		<i>Sir F. Sandford to Secretary of Treasury.</i>	
	November 5	Enclosing several orders of the Privy Council of Canada, on the subject of guarantee of "Canadian (Rupert's Land) Loan Act of 1869".....	150
		PROPOSED SYSTEM FOR SURVEY AND SUB-DIVISION OF TOWNSHIPS IN NORTH-WEST TERRITORY.	
	September 23	Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council,—advising that the system proposed by Col. Dennis be approved and adopted.....	152
	September 22	Memorandum from Minister of Public Works,—giving details of the system referred to above	152
		APPOINTMENT OF MR. MCDUGALL AS LIEUTENANT GOVERNOR.	
	September 28	Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council,—advising that Hon. William McDougall, C.B., be appointed Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories	152
	September 28	Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council,—advising that the annexed draft of letter to be addressed to the Hon. William McDougall, as his preliminary instruction on proceeding to the North-West Territories, be approved.....	153
	September 28	Letter of preliminary instructions referred to above.....	153

TABLE OF CONTENTS OF ADDENDA.—*Continued.*

No. of Despatch.	Date.	SUBJECT.	Page.
	1869.	CUSTOMS AND EXCISE LAWS IN THE NORTH-WEST TERRITORIES.	
	September 28	Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council,—recommending that the Lieutenant Governor be instructed to procure the passing of Ordinance or Ordinances by His Council, making the Customs and Excise Laws of the Dominion operative in the Territories; and that Mr. Begg be appointed Collector of Customs and Inspector of Inland Revenue under the said Ordinances	154
	December 7.	Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council,—submitting that it is inexpedient to make material changes in Customs duties in Rupert's Land; but that it may be necessary to establish duties on spirits and other articles now exempt.	155
	December 11	Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council,—recommending that Minute of 7th instant be cancelled, and that the present Tariff should remain in force for two years	155
		GREAT SEAL OF THE NORTH-WEST TERRITORIES.	
	November 23	Order in Council on above subject.....	156
		COMMUNICATION BETWEEN LAKE SUPERIOR AND RED RIVER.	
	1870 January 18.	Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council,—recommending that \$12,000.00 be authorized to be expended in purchase of boats and means of conveying them to where required	156
		POSTAL SERVICE TO FORT WILLIAM.	
	January 28.	Copy of Report of Committee of Privy Council,—advising that the agreement entered into between the Post Master General and the owners of the Steamer "Chicora" be sanctioned.....	157

JOHN YOUNG.

The Governor General transmits, for the information of the House of Commons, the accompanying papers relative to the recent occurrences in the North-West Territories, referred to in the third paragraph in the Speech from the Throne.

GOVERNMENT HOUSE,
Ottawa, 24th Feb., 1870.

COPY of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 28th September, 1869.

*To the Honorable the Secretary of State
for the Provinces, Ottawa.*

On the recommendation of the Honorable the Minister of Justice, the Committee advise that the Honorable William McDougall, C.B., be appointed Lieutenant-Governor of the North-West Territories, and that a Commission under the Great Seal do issue, to take effect from and after the day on which such Territories are transferred by Her Majesty to the Dominion of Canada.

And on the same recommendation they advise that Mr. McDougall's salary as such Lieutenant-Governor, be fixed at Seven Thousand Dollars per annum.

Certified.

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk P.C.

OFFICE OF THE SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES,
Ottawa, 28th September, 1869.

To the Honorable W. McDougall, C.B.

SIR,—I have the honor, by command of His Excellency the Governor General, to transmit to you, herewith, a copy of an Order of His Excellency in Council, together with the letter therein referred to, containing your preliminary instructions in proceeding to the North-West Territories.

I have, &c.,

E. A. MEREDITH,
Under Secretary.

*To the Honorable the Secretary of State
for the Provinces, &c., &c., &c.*

COPY of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 28th September, 1869.

The Committee have had under consideration the annexed Draft of a letter proposed to be addressed by the Secretary of State for the Provinces to the Hon. William McDougall, as his preliminary instructions on proceeding to the North-West Territories, and on the recommendation of the Hon. the Minister of Justice, advise that the same be approved by your Excellency.

Certified.

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk Privy Council.

OFFICE OF THE SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES,
Ottawa, 28th Sept., 1869.

*The Hon. Mr. McDougall, C.B.,
Ottawa.*

SIR,—As you have been appointed Lieutenant-Governor of the North-West Territories, in anticipation of the formal transfer of those Territories by Her Majesty to the Dominion of Canada, and as it is expected that such transfer will be made within the course of the next two or three months, I have the honor, by command of His Excellency the Governor General, to inform you that it is desirable that no time should be lost in making the necessary preliminary arrangements for the organization of the Government of the Territories.

2. With this view I am to instruct you to proceed with all convenient speed to Fort Garry, in order that you may effectually superintend the carrying out of the preliminary arrangements indicated in the preceding paragraph, and be ready to assume the Government of the Territories on their actual transfer to Canada.

3. On your arrival at Fort Garry, you will place yourself at once in communication with Mr. McTavish, the Governor of the Hudson Bay Company, and notify him of your appointment; you will, at the same time, offer seats in your Council to Mr. McTavish and to Mr. Black, or other Chief Judicial Officer of the Hudson Bay Company now in the Territory. Should either or both of these gentlemen decline to accept office, you will submit, for the consideration of His Excellency, the names of one or two other officers of the Company, whom you consider eligible to act as members of your Council. You will, at the same time, submit the names of several of the residents of character and standing in the Territory, unconnected with the Company, qualified to act as Councillors, giving particulars respecting them, and stating their comparative merits.

4. You will have the goodness to report with all convenient speed, for the information of His Excellency, on the state of the Laws now existing in the Territories, transmitting copies of any Laws, Ordinances or Regulations of the Company now in force there, together with a full report as to the mode of administering Justice, the organization of the Courts, the number and mode of appointment of Justices of the Peace, the Police arrangements, and the means adopted for keeping the peace, &c.

5. In preparing your Report on the matters referred to in the preceding paragraph, it will be well that you should confer with the Chief Judicial Officer of the Company in the Territories.

6. You will have the goodness to report also upon the system of Taxation (if any) now in force in the Territories, the system of licensing Shops, Taverns, &c., the mode of regulating or prohibiting the sale of Wines, Spirituous and Malt Liquors; and further, as to the mode of keeping up the Roads, and generally on the Municipal Organization (if any) existing in the Territories.

7. You will also make a full report upon the state of the Indian tribes now in the Territories—their numbers, wants and claims; the system heretofore pursued by the Hudson Bay Company in dealing with them—accompanied by any suggestions you may desire to offer with reference to their protection, and to the improvement of their condition.

8. You will have the goodness to report also on the nature and amount of currency or circulating medium now employed in the Territories, and of the probable requirements of the Territories in that respect in the future.

9. You will also report on the system of education (if any) which now obtains in the Territories.

10. You will also please to report as to such lands in the Territories as it may be desirable to open up at once for settlement, transmitting a plan of such survey as may be necessary, with an estimate of the cost of survey, a statement of the conditions of grants of land and settlement. The plan should show the number of townships it is proposed to lay out at once, the size and situation of townships, and the size of the lots, making the necessary reservation for churches, schools, roads, and other public purposes.

11. You will also report upon the relations at present existing between the Hudson Bay Company and the different religious bodies in the Territories.

12. You will also report as to the number of officers now employed by the Hudson Bay Company in the Administration of the Government of the Territories, stating the duties and salaries of such officers, and specifying those who should, in your opinion, be retained; you will also report as to the number of persons whom it will be necessary hereafter to employ in the Administration of the Government, and you will report generally on all subjects connected with the welfare of the Territories upon which it may seem to you desirable to communicate with the Government of the Dominion.

13. It is desirable that you should take immediate measures for the extension of the telegraph system from the Territory to Pembina, and for its connection at that place with the system of the American Telegraph Company or Companies, making any provisional arrangements for that purpose that may be necessary, and forwarding a copy of such arrangements to this Department for confirmation by His Excellency.

I have the honor to be, Sir,

E. A. MEREDITH,
Under Secretary of State.

OFFICE OF THE SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES,
11th October, 1869.

To the Honorable Mr. McDougall, C.B.,

SIR,—I have the honor, by command of His Excellency the Governor General, to transmit to you herewith three Commissions under the Great Seal, and one under His Excellency's Privy Seal, as follows:—

1. A Commission appointing you Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories.
2. A Commission (*Dedimus Potestatem*), to William McLavish and the other parties therein named to administer the Oaths of Allegiance and of Office to you as Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories.
3. A Commission (*Dedimus Potestatem*), to the same parties as are named in preceding Commission, to administer the Oaths of Office to all persons hereafter appointed to office in the North-West Territories.
4. A Commission under His Excellency's Privy Seal appointing you Deputy Governor for signing Marriage Licenses in the North-West Territories.

All these Commissions are to take effect from and after the day to be named by Her Majesty in pursuance of the "British North America Act, 1867," for the admission of Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territories into the Dominion of Canada.

The proposed Great Seal of the North-West Territories has been handed to Mr. Provencher, the bearer of this letter, to be delivered to you on his arrival at Fort Garry.

The Seal will require to be sanctioned by His Excellency in Council, and will, at an early day, be submitted to him for that purpose.

I have &c.,

E. A. MEREDITH,
Under Secretary of State.

Commission appointing the Honorable William McDougall, C. B., Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories.

CANADA.

JOHN YOUNG.

VICTORIA, by the Grace of God, of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, Queen, Defender of the Faith, &c., &c., &c.

To the Honorable William McDougall, of the City of Ottawa in the Province of Ontario in Our Dominion of Canada, Member of Our Privy Council for Canada, and Companion of Our Most Honorable Order of the Bath.

GREETING :

WHEREAS by an Act of the Parliament of Canada, made and passed in the Session held in the thirty-second and thirty-third years of Our Reign, and intituled, "An Act for the temporary Government of Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory, when united with Canada." After reciting that it is probable that We, pursuant to the British North America Act, 1867, may be pleased to admit Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory into the Union or Dominion of Canada, before the then next Session of the Canadian Parliament, and further reciting that it is expedient to prepare for the transfer of the said Territories from the Local Territories to the Government of Canada, at the time which may be appointed by Us for such admission, and to make some temporary provision for the Civil Government of such Territories until more permanent arrangements can be made by the Government and Legislature of Canada. It is by the said Act now in recital, in effect, enacted that it shall be lawful for Our Governor by any Order or Orders to be by him from time to time made with the advice of the Privy Council, and subject to such conditions and restrictions as to him shall seem meet, to authorize and empower such Officer as he may from time to time appoint as Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories to make provision for the administration of Justice therein, and generally to make, ordain, and establish, all such laws, institutions and ordinances, as may be necessary for the peace, order, and good government of Our Subjects and others therein, and it is also further enacted that the Lieutenant Governor shall administer the Government under instructions given him from time to time by Order in Council.

And Whereas for the purpose of preparing for the transfer of the North-West Territories aforesaid to the Government of Canada, at the time which may be appointed by Us for such admission and for making some temporary provision for the Civil Government of such Territories, We are desirous of appointing you the said WILLIAM MCDUGALL, to be *Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories.*

Now know ye that We reposing special trust and confidence in the prudence, courage, loyalty, and integrity of you, the said WILLIAM MCDUGALL, of Our especial grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion have thought fit to constitute and appoint you, *and We do hereby* constitute and appoint you on, from, and after the day to be named by Us for the admission of Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory into the Union or Dominion of Canada, to be, during Our pleasure, the *Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories* aforesaid, *and We do hereby authorize,* and empower, and require, and command you on, from, and after the day to be so named by Us, for the admission of Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory into the Union or Dominion of Canada, as aforesaid, in due manner to do and execute in all things that shall belong to your said command and the trust We have reposed in you, according to the several provisions and instructions granted or appointed you by this Our Commission, and of the Act hereinbefore recited, according to

such instructions as are herewith given to you, or which may from time to time be given to you in respect of the North-West Territories aforesaid, and the Government thereof, by order of our Governor General in Council under the sign manual of Our said Governor General, or by Us through one of our Privy Council of Canada, and according to such laws as are or shall be enforced within the North-West Territories.

In testimony whereof We have caused these our Letters to be made Patent and the Great Seal of Canada to be hereunto affixed; *Witness Our* trusty and well beloved the Right Honorable SIR JOHN YOUNG, Baronet, one of Our Most Honorable Privy Council, Knight Grand Cross of Our Most Honorable Order of the Bath, Knight Grand Cross of Our Most Distinguished Order of Saint Michael and Saint George, *Governor General of Canada.*

At Our Government House, in Our *City of Ottawa*, this *Twenty-ninth* day of *September*, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and *sixty-nine*, and the *thirty-third* year of *Our Reign.*

By command.

HECTOR L. LANGEVIN,
Secretary of State.

HUDSON'S BAY POST,
PEMBINA, October 31st, 1869.

The Honorable
The Secretary of State for the Provinces,
Ottawa.

Received by
Secretary of
State, 19th
of November
1869.

SIR,—I have the honor to report my arrival at this place last evening, where I have determined to remain for a short time, in consequence of the events hereafter detailed.

Rumours of hostile movements on the part of the French half-breeds against the authority of the Canadian Government, reached me at several points between St. Paul and Pembina, but they were so wild and contradictory that I gave little heed to them.

I met the Honorable Joseph Howe on his return from Fort Garry, about half-a-day's journey south of Georgetown, in the open Prairie. As the weather was stormy, we had only a very short interview. He stated that the people of the Red River Settlement were well disposed towards the Canadian Government, but from some circumstances, of which he would advise me by letter from Fort Abercrombie, the feelings of a certain section of the population had been excited, and that delicate handling would be necessary to allay them. He did not state, and apparently did not anticipate, that there was any danger of an armed insurrection before my arrival at Fort Garry.

At a point, about thirty miles from this post, where I camped for the night, I met a Mr. Sandford, of Hamilton, (Ontario), who put into my hands despatches of which the enclosed are copies (marked A. B. C. D.) He stated also, that he was stopped at Scratching River, (about 15 miles from Fort Garry), by a body of armed men, who had thrown a barricade across the road, and who expressed their determination to prevent me from passing that point. He had no doubt of their intention to carry out their threats, by force, if necessary.

His report of the state of feeling among the French half-breeds, and of the movements of the insurgents, confirmed generally the statements in the enclosed papers.

On my arrival at the American Custom House, at Pembina, a half-breed, who had been waiting there for the last three or four days, put into my hands a letter, of which the paper marked E is a copy, and immediately disappeared. I paid no attention to his

letter, but as soon as the proper entries had been made by the collector, proceeded to the Hudson Bay Company's Post, about two miles distant, and within the "Territory of the North West." Here I found another despatch (marked F.) with a note from Colonel Dennis (marked)*.

This morning I determined to send forward Mr. Provencher (who, with Mr. Richards and Captain Cameron, accompanied me from Fort Abererombie to this place) to Fort Garry, if permitted to go so far, with a verbal message to Governor McTavish, announcing my arrival within his jurisdiction, and claiming his protection for myself and party. Mr. Provencher was instructed to ascertain from the insurgents, by a friendly conference if possible, their object, and the extent of the force at their command;—He was instructed to assure them of the determination of the Government to deal justly with all classes, and to respect existing rights, without reference to race or religion. But he was to explain to them that until the new government was organized, and so long as they remained with arms in their hands, no official communication could be had with them by me, or any one on my behalf. Mr. Provencher left this morning about eight o'clock, with a reliable guide, who is well acquainted with the country and the half-breeds of the settlement.

I shall remain here with Mr. Richards and the balance of my party, until I hear from Mr. Provencher, or learn from other sources that the insurgents have dispersed.

I have further to report that Captain Cameron of the Royal Artillery, who accompanied me in his own conveyance for the greater part of the way from St. Cloud, and who expects to hold an appointment under the Government, determined this morning to proceed to Fort Garry on his own responsibility. I endeavoured to dissuade him from making the attempt until we had some assurance that the road would not be obstructed, but he persisted in making preparations for the journey, whereupon I addressed him the following note (marked G).

After reading my note he said he would take all risks, and proceeded on his journey, taking with him his wife and two servants.

I have just heard that I am to have a visit to-morrow from the Chief of a band of Chippawa Indians, who claim title to a large tract of country extending from the boundary line at Pembina towards Fort Garry. I have agreed to TALK with him, and will report the result of my interview in due course.

I have the honor to be, Sir,

W. McDougall.

POSTSCRIPT, November 1st, 1869.

The Honorable

The Secretary of State for the Provinces, &c.

Col. Dennis and Mr. Wm. Hallett have just arrived from Fort Garry, having made a detour over the Prairie in order to avoid the armed party at Scratching River: the situation is but little changed, except that the attempt of the insurgents to rally the Indians to their side has failed. Two chiefs, who obeyed their summons, returned home refusing to take part in the movement, when they had ascertained its nature.

I have just had a long talk with the chiefs of the tribe who claim the country in this neighbourhood. They repudiate all sympathy with the half-breeds who are in arms.

In haste,

Very respectfully yours,

Wm. McDougall.

* Sic in original.—See Letter marked F. F., page 13.

[A]

FORT GARRY, 11th October, 1869.

MEMORANDUM of facts and circumstances connected with the active opposition by the French half-breeds in this settlement to the prosecution of the Government surveys.

This day about 2 p.m. a messenger arrived, Mr. Farmer, chain-bearer of Mr. Webb's party employed in surveying the base line or parallel of latitude, between Townships 6 and 7 east of the Meridian, on which service the party left a week ago to-day, bringing the unwelcome information from Mr. Webb, that his further progress with the survey had been stopped by a band* of some 18 French half-breeds, headed by a man named Louis Riel.

Mr. Webb had projected the line to about the fourth section, in Township 7, 2nd range east, and being within say 2½ miles of the Red River, when this occurrence took place.

He was ordered by the leader of the party at once to desist from further running the line, and in fact notified that he must leave the country on the south side of the Assiniboine, which country the party claimed as the property of the French half-breeds, and which they would not allow to be surveyed by the Canadian Government.

No arms were seen with the party, but by standing on the chain and using threats of violence if the survey was persisted in, it became evident that to go on with the survey would probably have led to a collision, and Mr. Webb, in accordance with written instructions, which I had previously given him to provide for any such contingency, discontinued his work, and as the half-breeds would not allow him to remain encamped where he was, moved his camp out to the main road on the Red River, waiting for orders, having sent off in the meantime. Mr. Farmer, as above stated.

I at once waited on Dr. Cowan, the chief magistrate in the settlement, and laying the facts of the case before him, requested that he would consult with the Governor, or such other magistrate as he might think desirable to call in, and take such further steps with regard to this outrage, as he and they might think called for under the circumstances.

I remarked to Dr. Cowan at the same time that I question whether, owing to the unsettled state of the land tenure as regarded the half-breeds and Indians, and the peculiar irritation or sensitiveness that existed on the part of the French half-breeds in view of the transfer of the Territory and the assumption of the Government by Canada, it would be politic to take harsh measures towards the offenders in this case, but stated that as he and his brother magistrate knew the temper and feeling of the people in the settlement generally, that I left the matter in their hands, satisfied that they would do what would seem most advisable under the circumstances.

Before I left Dr. Cowan it was settled that he would call in another magistrate, Mr. Goulet, and consult with him as to what course to take.

TUESDAY, 12th October, 1869.

I waited on Dr. Cowan this morning, about 11 o'clock, and was informed that he and Mr. Goulet had thought it best to send for Riel, the leader, and ascertain what the party means by this proceeding, and explain to him and them the serious character of the offence of which they have been guilty, and endeavour quietly to obtain a promise that no further opposition should be made to continuing the survey.

* NAMES OF BAND.

Louis Riel, Leader.
De Sangré and Son,
Baptiste Taureau and Three Sons,
François Charest,
Edward Morin,
Janvier Ritchot
Other names not legible.

The magistrates had done so accordingly but had failed either to extract from him any rational excuse for their proceeding (beyond the assertion that the Canadian Government had no right to make surveys in the Territory without the express permission of the people of the settlement), or any promise that their opposition would be withdrawn.

Dr. Cowan stated further, that Riel was to be back at 2 o'clock, when he, the Doctor, if Riel refused to listen to reason, would bring in the influence of Governor McTavish, whose health being in a critical position, he had desired should not be troubled if it could be avoided.

WEDNESDAY, October 13th.

Dr. Cowan informed me this morning that the interview of himself and Governor McTavish with Riel, which had taken place yesterday, had been in no respect satisfactory, that Riel still persisted that injustice was being done by the Canadian Government, and utterly refused to withdraw from the position he and those under him had taken.

Dr. Cowan said he should now apply to the Father Superior Lestanc, in charge of the Diocese during the absence of Bishop Taché, and that he felt sanguine that the Rev. Father, if so disposed could put a stop to trouble at once.

It being important that I should no longer delay visiting another of my parties under Mr. Hart, engaged in projecting the meridian up near Shoal Lake (on which service, had this trouble not occurred, I would have left on the afternoon of the 11th instant). I determined to leave to-day, desiring Dr. Cowan, after consulting with Father Lestanc, to send a note to my office, stating the result, and instructing Mr. Webb; accordingly I started on the service above mentioned.

OCTOBER 14th to 20th, both inclusive.

Absent at Shoal Lake and examining country between that Lake and Lake Manitota.

OCTOBER 21st.

Having returned to the settlement late last night, found Dr. Cowan's efforts with Father Lestanc had been without avail, the Rev. Father declining to attempt to use any influence with the party of half-breeds in question.

Dr. Cowan informed me that the Rev. Father, in explanation of his refusal, said that any such attempt in consequence of an idea that possessed the half-breeds that the Company was in collusion with the Canadian Government, would have a tendency to impress them with the idea that the Church also was in sympathy with the Government, and so might lead to weakening their influence over the people in a religious point of view.

Dr. Cowan had written a note, (see same dated 15th October,) announcing the entire failure of his endeavours to get over the opposition of the French Settlers to the survey, in consequence of which Mr. Webb, according to my instructions in such event, had withdrawn his party to the north side of the Assiniboine, and was proceeding with the surveying of the settlement north of Fort Garry, to which no opposition was offered. Such is the present condition of affairs.

SAME DAY, 4 O'CLOCK P.M.

The High Constable, Mulligan, has just come to inform me, as a matter of duty, that a meeting took place yesterday, at a house of a French half-breed, named Bruce, on the other side of the river, by a number of the disaffected French party, among whom the man Riel was conspicuous.

That at such meeting it was resolved, to send an armed party to meet the Governor, whom they expected to come in to-morrow, and to prevent at all hazards, his entering the settlement.

Under these circumstances, not wishing to identify myself with any one of the three parties into which the people in the village are evidently divided, and who have no

sympathy with each other, either socially or politically. I called in the council of two Canadian gentlemen, Messrs. Sanford and Turner, of Hamilton, who had accompanied Mr. Howe on his visit, and remaining behind that gentleman were still in the settlement.

He considered that the circumstances called for immediate and vigorous action on the part of the Authorities, and it was arranged that Mr. Turner and I should wait upon Judge Black, and inform him of the intended outrage.

We found Judge Black at his residence, some four (4) miles down the settlement, and laid the matter before him, and it was arranged that he should wait upon the Governor and Dr. Cowan, early to-morrow morning, to concert measures to defeat the object of the refractory half-breeds.

On our return, there were reports confirmatory of the statements we had heard.

Friday, October 22nd.

I met Judge Black, Governor Mr. McTavish, and Dr. Cowan this morning at the Fort by appointment, when the matter was fully discussed in all its bearings, and in view of the serious aspect of affairs, the Governor thought it only proper that a meeting of the Council of the Colony should be convened with the least possible delay, and upon their advice and action such further steps should be promptly taken as should effectually prevent the perpetration of the gross outrage intended.

In evidence of the object intended by this armed party, reference is called to the affidavit of * * * , a copy of which is hereto annexed, which was made during the afternoon, the original having been sworn to before Dr. Cowan, and remaining in his possession.

This affidavit was further corroborated by a statement made about 4 p.m., by Mr. * * * , who, on his way from Pembina to-day, found a body of armed men in possession of the roadway near the crossing of the river Sale, across which they had thrown a barricade, through which barricade they were not allowed to pass without explanation, and without giving satisfactory assurances that a stranger who formed one of the party was not connected with the Canadian Government.

The meeting of Council, Governor McTavish called for Monday, the 25th inst., it being stated that some of the members resided at such a distance that it could not be convened at an earlier date.

J. S. DENNIS.

Red River Settlement,
October 23rd, 1869.

[B]

FORT GARRY, October 15th, 1869.

Colonel Dennis.

DEAR SIR,—I very much regret to say that we have failed entirely in our endeavours to get over the opposition of the French Settlers to the survey.

Governor McTavish has done all in his power, in the present state of his health, and every effort has been made by Mr. Goulet and myself, to persuade these men, but to no purpose.

I believe they are now of opinion that we are influenced unduly in favor of the Canadian Government, so that it is in vain for us to have any further correspondence with them at present.

I remain, dear sir, yours faithfully,

WILLIAM COWAN.

[C]

MONDAY AFTERNOON.

MY DEAR COL. DENNIS,—Your note has just been handed to me, and of course, if you wish it, I will be glad to see you after the meeting of Council, which will, possibly,

not be over before 2 o'clock, but I will sead down and let you know. Matters from information that has reached me, look serious ; but it is very difficult, judging of affairs of this kind here ; and sometimes when the case looks bad, the whole thing subsides. I have seen to many difficulties here got over quietly to despair until the worst has taken place ; but I must allow, there are incidents in the present case that have not been in former troubles.

Yours truly,

W. McTAVISH.

[D]

RED RIVER SETTLEMENT.

To WIT :—

* * * * maketh Oath and Saith :—

During the afternoon of yesterday, some twenty men or thereabouts, fully armed, made their appearance at the crossing of the River Sale, on the road between here and Pembina ; and other and smaller parties of men, also armed, kept coming in during the afternoon and evening, till as many as forty were in the party.

That the said party of forty men are now billeted (or were when the deponent left home this a.m., at which time they had sent off some men for more provisions) round in the adjacent houses.

That the men composing the said party, deponent believes, all belong to the parishes of St. Norbert, above mentioned, and St. Vital, and that the avowed object of their meeting in arms, and waiting at the said Point, was to turn back the new Governor, Mr. McDougall, and not allow him to enter further into the Colony. One of the men in conversation with the deponent who was naturally anxious to find out the meaning of such an assemblage with arms in their hands, told the deponent the above was their object, and further said that if the Governor persisted in attempting to come further than that point, *i.e.*, the crossing of the River Sale, they would shoot him.

The deponent saith further, that he was informed by this party, and believes the same (inasmuch as he saw a number of horsemen passing previously), that another party mounted, supposed to consist of twenty men or more, are now in advance, somewhere about Scratching River, accompaied by a man named Riel, whose intention is to stop the Governor; and submit to him several questions, or rather demands, in the event of refusing which, he is to be warned not to proceed.

There is a further and third party between the two points mentioned, which this deponent, from information received, believes to number forty men.

Should the Governor persist in coming forward, notwithstanding repeated warnings, these parties will fall back on the reserve at the river Sale, and then final action will be taken as above mentioned, should he still further endeavor to force his way on to the settlement.

The deponent further saith that, among other houses in the vicinity where certain of the forty men at the river Sale are billeted, ten of the armed party find quarters at the house of the Curé, Rev. Père Ritchot.

Finally, that the deponent seriously believes that the said men are truly in earnest, and that without prompt action be taken by the authorities to avert the same, a serious calamity is about to ensue, in an outrage which may be of a fatal character, on the person of the Honorable gentleman now about entering the colony to assume the charge of Government.

* * *

Sworn before me at Fort Garry,
this 22nd day of October, 1869.

WILLIAM COWAN, J. P.

[E]

A MONSIEUR W. McDougall.

MONSIEUR,—Le Comité National des Métis de la Rivière Rouge intime à Monsieur W. McDougall l'ordre de ne pas entrer sur le Territoire du Nord-Ouest sans une permission spéciale de ce Comité.

Par ordre du Président,

JOHN BRUCE,

LOUIS RIEL, Secrétaire.

Daté à St. Norbert, Rivière Rouge.

Ce 21e jour d'Octobre, 1869.

[F.]

WEDNESDAY, 27th October. 1869.

NOON.

Have just returned from a visit to the lower part of the settlement on the west side of Red River, having left yesterday afternoon.

Called upon Mr. * * * and Mr. * * *, and others.

From the conversations had with these different gentlemen, I am satisfied that the general disposition is in favor of receiving the incoming Government with respect, but there is no enthusiasm.

The attitude of the English-speaking portion of the colony, may, I think, be fairly stated as follows :—

They say : We feel a disposition to extend a sincere welcome to the Honorable Mr. McDougall, as the gentleman who has been selected for our future Governor.

We regret sincerely that the good name of the colony should be prejudiced by any such action as that we are told is contemplated by a portion of the French half-breeds.

We consider it a most outrageous proceeding on their part, and one that we would be glad to see, if possible, put a stop to. At the same time, should an appeal to arms be necessary, we could hardly justify ourselves in engaging in a conflict, which would be, in our opinion, certain to resolve itself into one of nationalities and religions, and of which we could hardly, at present, see the termination.

We feel this way : We feel confidence in the future administration of the Government of this country under Canadian rule ; at the same time, we have not been consulted in any way as a people, in entering into the Dominion.

The character of the new Government has been settled in Canada, without our being consulted. We are prepared to accept it respectfully, to obey the laws, and to become good subjects : but when you present to us the issue of a conflict with the French party, with whom we have hitherto lived in friendship, backed up, as they would be, by the Roman Catholic Church, which appears probable by the course at present being taken by the priests, in which conflict it is almost certain the aid of the Indians would be invoked, and perhaps obtained by that party, we feel disinclined to enter upon it, and think that the Dominion should assume the responsibility of establishing amongst us what it, and it alone, has decided upon.

At the same time, we are ready—should the Council make an appeal to the settlement, to prevent the gross outrage contemplated—by a large mounted deputation, unarmed, to meet and escort the Honorable William McDougall to Winnipeg ; and thus show to the French party, now in arms, that the English-speaking portion of the colony is entirely opposed to the present threatening movement by a portion of the French half-breeds,—we will cheerfully and promptly respond to the call.

7 P.M.

Mr. * * * has just come in, and reports that about eighty of the French party, who are opposed to the views of the insurgents, met by invitation at the camp of the disaffected to-day; but that their remonstrances and appeals to get them to disband, were entirely without avail.

Several priests were present; among others, Père Lestanc, the Father Superior.

Père Lestanc took little or no part in the proceedings one way or another; some of the others were less scrupulous, Père Ritchot declaring in favor of the stand taken, and called upon the insurgents to maintain their ground.

The appeals of this priest,* and of the leaders of the insurgent party, had the effect of even withdrawing then and there, some twenty or thereabouts of Mr. Dease's party over to their side.

Mr. Dease thereupon withdrew his party from the ground, and they accordingly went into camp a short distance nearer to Fort Garry, where they are at present.

Mr. Dease, previous to coming to me, states that he had an interview with Governor McTavish, in which he expressed the determination of his party to remain together, and if possible, to overawe the others, with which view he requested a supply of arms and ammunition.

He proposes, if these are granted to his party, to escort the Governor in.

His proposition is, for a number of his men (say fifteen) to ride down towards Pembina, and meet Mr. McDougall, and escort him straight to his residence on the Assiniboine, passing the "old crossing" over the river Sale, possession of which (as it is understood that there are a few men of the insurgents now at that point), should previously have been taken by another party of his men.

He does not fear that Mr. McDougall will be interfered with at any other point.

He thinks, that, once on the north side of the Assiniboine, at his own house, or at the Fort, five miles lower down, Mr. McDougall would not be subjected to any indignity.

I accompanied Mr. Dease to the Fort, and had an interview with Governor McTavish, at which Dr. Cowan was present, when Mr. Dease's proposition was discussed.

The Governor, who was very feeble, and is evidently feeling the responsibility and delicacy of his position, determined to consider the matter to-night, and call in the aid of some Members of the Council to-morrow morning, and decide what course was best to be pursued.

It is worthy of remark, that Mr. Dease expressed his conviction from what had fallen from the lips of the insurgent leaders, that it would not be a matter of much regret to them, "implying that they would feel it a relief rather than otherwise, owing to the evident division among the French elements," were the Governor to find his way into the settlement by another route.

Mr. Dease remarked to me that his party were entirely without provision, and he feared, if they were obliged to go home, it might be difficult to get them together again, and so prejudice the position in favor of the insurgents; and I agreed to send him a small supply to-morrow morning, for their sustenance, until the Council shall have decided on the course to be taken.

There was no determination come to by Governor McTavish as to furnishing his party with arms.]

I understood that there were three or four hundred stand of arms, the old "Brown Bess," with ammunition, at present in the Fort.

I may say further that I sent * * *, a man of influence among the French Half-Breeds, but favorable to our cause, up to the French Settlement on the "White Horse Plains," on the Assiniboine, yesterday, to use his influence to prevent the people there from coming down to help the insurgents. He returned to-day, and the result of his mission is given in the annexed paper.

J. S. DENNIS.

* * * another of the Dease party, testifies that, on this occasion, the priest raved and tore his gown, addressing the assemblage in the most frantic and excited manner.

Memo.

Visit to the "White Horse Plains."

TUESDAY EVENING, October 26th, 1869.

Came from the road from Mangus Buston's, and go to bring the horse from the church to the water. The nuns see him water his horse—they run to him, and ask him, "Did you come from St. Vital? They said to him, "to join the people, and do not let the Governor cross the lines, or come into the country; he will speak and say many things to please you; fill his mouth with sugar, but he will do you much harm when he gets in."

They told the people to get their arms, and take them with them. I supplied them with provisions, bags of pemican, &c. They got arms from Cowley. About 28 or 40 people.

Priest *Cabina** spoke against * * * * letter to Buston, saying that * * * * wanted to blind the people.

NOTE—Knows Heard the priest and nuns declare, both, that the bishop had sent letters about, this to from Canada, that the Governor was not to be allowed to come into the Territory. ask him.

Honorable Wm. McDougall.

F. F. MY DEAR MR. MCDUGALL,—The enclosed will bring matters up to (Private.) last evening. This morning Mr. Dease has been with me to say that Governor McTavish has decided to make an appeal to the people, to obtain a large unarmed party to go down and escort you through. In which case it will no doubt be responded to generally, but this may take two or three days, as some parts of the Settlement are so distant.

In the meantime, till further fully advised to the contrary, you would only prejudice the chances of a quiet settlement of affairs by endeavoring to force your way on.

I will endeavor to keep you informed every day in some way or other, and you need only be patient, if you can.

The bearer, who is reliable, will give you an accurate account of the state of things on the road.

Most truly yours,

J. S. DENNIS.

If I find I can be of less use here than with you, I will at once go down to meet you.

October 27th, 11 A.M.

J. S. D.

(G)

PEMBINA, October 31st, 1869.

Captain D. R. Cameron, Royal Artillery.

SIR,—I have the honor to inform you that information has reached me, of the truth of which I can have no doubt, that the road to Fort Garry is barricaded, and in possession of a party of insurgents, who threaten to arrest and turn back the representatives and officials of the Canadian Government. I have determined to await at this place, communications from the local authorities at Fort Garry, who advise that any attempt to force a passage under present circumstances would embarrass their proceedings.

As you will probably be regarded as an official of the Canadian Government, I am of opinion that you will incur some personal risk, and may cause some embarrassments to the loyal and peaceably disposed in their efforts to quell the outbreak, by provoking a collision at the present moment.

I do not make any order in your case, as I have no authority to direct your movements, but I wish to relieve myself of all responsibility for the consequences of your attempt to proceed immediately to Fort Garry.

I have the honor to be, Sir,

Your most obedient servant,

W. McDougall.

OTTAWA, 19th November, 1869.

*The Honorable W. McDougall, C.B.,
Pembina.*

Received by Mr. SIR,—I had the honor to receive this morning your Despatch of the McDougall, 6th 31st ult., covering Colonel Dennis' Report and other papers, relating to December. the obstructions opposed to your progress through the country lying between Pembina and Fort Garry.

Those papers were promptly submitted to the Privy Council, and I am instructed to convey to you their entire approval of the judgment and prudence displayed by you in the trying circumstances in which you were placed.

At this distance from the scene of disturbance, any instructions that could be sent to you, would only embarrass you, and restrain your freedom of action. You will, therefore, exercise your own judgment, and decide on the instant, as circumstances change, what is best to be done.

The Government entertain the hope that the opposition presented will be withdrawn when the prejudices aroused have been allayed by frank explanations, and in the meantime they would deeply regret that blood should be shed, or that any hasty or intemperate exercise, even of lawful authority, should, in the transfer of the country, array the feelings of any large portion of the people against your administration.

As matters stand, you can claim or assert no authority in the Hudson's Bay Territory, until the Queen's Proclamation, annexing the country to Canada, reaches you through this office. It will probably be issued on the 2nd December, and will be forwarded by a safe hand as soon as received. You had better inform Governor McTavish that you are only proceeding to Fort Garry on the assumed consent of the Company, and its officers, and having stated the facts, await his answer. If he either declines to admit you, or is powerless to give you safe conduct, stay where you are till further advised.

In due time, no doubt, when all peaceful means have been exhausted, should it be necessary, the powers of the Crown will be exerted, and the authority of this Government maintained. In the meantime, let me hear from you by every mail, and inform me by what safe means we can communicate with the least possible delay.

I have the honor to be Sir,

Your most obedient servant,

JOSEPH HOWE,

Secretary of State to the Provinces.

*The Honorable the Secretary of State,
for the Provinces, Ottawa.*

PEMBINA, 4th November, 1869.

Received by the Secretary of State, on 20th Nov. 1869.

MY DEAR SIR,—Having been engaged during the day in arranging for a temporary residence on the American side of the line, and in writing to the authorities at Fort Garry, I find I have only a few moments left to catch the mail of to-day. Important events have occurred since my report of the 31st ult. On the 2nd inst., a body of armed half-breeds galloped up to Hudson's Bay Post, and demanded an audience with me; two of the leaders were admitted, and told me they had been sent to order me out of the North-West Territory. When I asked who sent them, they replied, "the government": to my question, what government? they said, "the government they had made." They said I must leave by nine o'clock next morning, I explained my position, but they were evidently very ignorant, and had come for one object, viz:—to compel me to leave the Territory. In the morning they appeared at the gate with arms in their hands, and loudly demanded that we should leave, as after nine o'clock they would not answer for our lives. We accordingly put our horses to our wagons, and drove across the line, accompanied by a portion of the party with arms in their hands.

We are now encamped on American Territory waiting the issue of events. As soon as I hear from the authorities at Fort Garry, what action they or the people have taken on hearing of this outrage, I shall determine my course. The weather is still fair, but winter may set in at any moment. Mr. Provencher and Captain Cameron were sent back from the barricade under escort, and are now here.

There is a strong sympathy among the people here with the insurgents. We are not free from peril, but will not run away so long as we see any purpose can be served by our presence here.

In haste,

Very respectfully yours,

W. McDUGALL.

HAMILTON, 18th, November, 1869.

MY DEAR MR. HOWE,—I am in receipt of your kind letter of the 16th, respecting Telegram which was sent with the conviction that matters were in a more serious state than Mr. McDougall or you supposed. Immediately after your departure, the insurrection began to develop itself. Armed men immediately took possession of the roads entering

Fort Garry. A meeting of the Council was at once called, and the wildest excitement followed. The leader of the Insurgents "Riel" was before the Council from 10 A.M. until 7 P.M., and concluded by convincing them that he was correct, and they wrong. We proposed leaving the Friday following your departure, but were detained, by order of Governor McTavish, four days, to hear the decision of the Council, that he might send by me verbal advice to Governor McDougall. The Council finding itself powerless, broke up, without taking any action, while the Insurgents were gathering fresh material hourly. Governor McTavish was unable to attend the Council, and is failing rapidly. Shall not be surprised to hear of his death by any mail. When leaving Stinking River, we found an encampment of the rebels, thirty strong. They had barricaded the roads, and were patrolling on both sides of the barricade, all armed with rifles. They seized our horses by the heads, and we had to dismount. It was very generally known they had a force out to intercept the Government supplies for Dennis and Snow, also the rifles being brought forward by McDougall. I, however, sent messengers to him; and learned when I met him, the rifles had been carefully stowed below, so they are safe.

Mr. McDougall not having been in the settlement, can only have a general idea of the true position, and I felt affairs were assuming so serious an aspect, that I thought I would at once hurry down to Ottawa, and enter fully into detail, but afterwards thought it better to telegraph, and if you thought it necessary, you would telegraph for more particulars. On my arrival in St. Paul, and when passing through St. Cloud, and other of those villages, I found a great many rough men collecting and preparing for the Prairies, just the class who would only be too ready to filibuster, and knowing that in a week they would be out of the way, I put into the paper the account of Mr. McDougall's safe arrival at Fort Garry you saw telegraphed from St. Paul's, which, I have to confess, had not one word of truth in it. Things are not healthy, and I am afraid it will cost money and blood yet.

If there is anything more you may wish to know, write to me, or if you think it necessary, I will run down.

I am, &c.,

W. E. SANFORD.

OTTAWA, 19th November, 1869.

See Letter
to Honorable
McDougall,
November 19
1869.

MY DEAR WHEELOCK,—Send this by a safe hand as quickly as you can, so that it may not be stopped or tampered with by the way.

Yours truly,

JOSEPH HOWE.

Say nothing of this, the expense will be paid.

Telegraph

November 20th, 1869.

Mr. W. E. Sanford, Hamilton.

Letter received. Thanks. Telegraph any new facts. Need not come here.

JOSEPH HOWE.

(Telegraph.)

OTTAWA, November 20th, 1869.

JOSEPH WHEELOCK, St. Paul, Minnesota.—Letter for you mailed to-day. Should Governor McDougall return to St. Paul, request him to remain there till he hears from me. Telegraph any authentic news from frontier; they will charge tolls to this office.

JOSEPH HOWE.

DACOTAH, TERRITORY, U.S., Pembina, Nov. 5th, 1869.

Received by
Secretary of
State for the
Province, 26th
November.

SIR,—I have the honor to report, for the information of His Excellency the Governor General in Council, the events that have occurred in this vicinity since my communication of the 31st October. I expected to have been able to send this report by the mail which left Pembina this morning, but in consequence of the unexpected closing of the mail last evening at six o'clock, which the Postmaster said was "contract time," I was able to write only a short note, which, for prudential reasons, I addressed unofficially to Mr. Meredith. I now proceed to give you the details of the important events which prevented me from remaining in the North-West Territory.

On the 1st day of November, about eleven o'clock, a.m., while I was talking with a Chippawa Chief, and some of his band who had met me by appointment, Colonel Dennis and an English half-breed, Mr. Hallett, arrived from Fort Garry, having left the Fort early in the morning of the previous day. They rode over the prairie some miles to the West of Red River, and were not observed by the rebel scouts. Colonel Dennis brought a despatch from Governor McTavish, of which the paper marked A. is a copy. He also handed me the papers marked B. and C., bringing down his own narrative to the day previous to his departure. As the Governor and his Council concurred with Colonel Dennis in the opinion that it would be imprudent for me to proceed to Fort Garry under present circumstances; and as no steps had been taken towards organizing a force to support the authorities, I had no alternative but to remain at the Hudson Bay Company's Post. The furniture, &c., for the Government House having arrived at Pembina from St. Cloud, the person who had undertaken to deliver it at Fort Garry called upon me to know if he was to proceed with his freight, suggesting that it might be stopped on the way, and perhaps destroyed. I told him that as he had bargained to deliver it at Fort Garry he must complete his contract. I had reason to believe that he was aware of the designs and movements of the insurgents, and was in their confidence, if not in their plot. I took pains to impress him with the belief that it was no child's play his friends had begun, and that all the consequences of rebellion against Imperial authority must follow in this case as in others. I told him I had been sent as a civil governor, and was prepared to treat all classes and parties in the most friendly and impartial manner; but if they preferred a military regime and martial law they were taking the proper course to secure it. I knew that he would report my remarks as he passed through the rebel camp, and I thought it would be politic, since they had gone so far, that they should understand the view I took of their proceedings. I knew that Mr. Provencher's mission must end either favourably or otherwise before my interlocutor could see his friends. He told me that a party of twenty mounted men would pay me a visit in a day or two. As evidence of the earnestness and patriotic spirit of the insurgents he showed me a song in French, copied partly from the Marseillaise, and which was being circulated among the half-breeds of the neighborhood. He proposed to buy some of the property in his charge, the stoves especially, in order to save it from destruction. I declined his proposal with the remark, that the rebels might as well destroy the stoves as anything else, but I would hold him responsible, in the first place for their safe delivery at Fort Garry, and I thought the farms and cattle of the half-breed settlers would ultimately be found sufficient to pay any damage they might

inflict on public or private property. I told him he might do as he pleased with his freight, as I had no directions to give him until he arrived at Fort Garry. Upon this he left the Post, convinced at all events, that he had not succeeded in frightening me into a sale of the Government property at his own price. His carts, in a few minutes, were on their way to the settlement. I have not, up to this moment, (4 o'clock, p.m.) been able to ascertain whether they have passed the barricade unmolested or not.

The interview with the Chippawa Chief, Kewetaosh and his band, which I stated in my previous report, was fixed for this day, was interesting to us and apparently satisfactory to him. His pipe-bearer, after filling his pipe with tobacco mixed with dried willow bark, and placing a live coal upon it, rose with the pipe in his hand and waited for an observation from the Chief. He, with the dignity of his race and class, rose slowly from his seat, and pointing to a large silver medal on his breast, which had been given to his grandfather in the time of George III., said he was glad to see me as the English Governor. Pointing to the fumes of his pipe, he said there was no harm in that smoke—it meant peace and friendship between us. He then sat down and the pipe-bearer presented me the pipe, which I smoked for a little and then returned to him. It was then handed to Mr. Richards and the other members of my party, each in turn. It was next smoked by the Indians, and last of all by the Chief. This ceremony being over, the Chief drew himself up for his speech. He is a pure Indian, about fifty years of age, with a stately figure and an agreeable and intelligent countenance. He repeated his friendly greeting, and said he had waited some time to see me. He was sorry to hear of the proceedings of the half-breeds in the settlement and wished me not to go there. He had not much to say, but would ask me a question. Had I bought their (his) land from the Hudson's Bay Company? He then proceeded to lay claim to the country from Pembina to the Assiniboine, and from the high lands on the West to the Lake of the Woods. He said his ancestors had never sold their title to any part of it, they had only lent as much as a man could see under a horse's belly on both sides of the river to the Company; and he now wanted to know what I was going to do with his land. He repeated his desire to be on good terms with me, and said that neither he nor his band had anything to do with the movements or designs of the French half-breeds.

I replied to his speech through an interpreter, a French Canadian settler, who speaks a little Chippawa and about as much English. I reciprocated his friendly greeting and expressed my regret, that from the length of the journey I had travelled, and the time required for preparation for it, I had not reached Pembina as soon as was expected. I was glad to see him and his band, and hoped that we would be able to make a satisfactory agreement about any land of his we might require. I explained the nature of the arrangement with the Hudson's Bay Company, which I assured him left his rights, whatever they might be, just as he stood before. With respect to his remark, that I ought not to go to Fort Garry, if he meant it as a friendly warning, I thanked him for it, but I told him I must obey, not the wishes of others, but the requirements of duty. I was sent to govern the country in the Queen's name, and would do it unless prevented by force. I then produced a map of the territory, and asked him to point out the bounds of the lands to which he and his band laid claim. This proposal was evidently something he did not expect, and a good deal of consultation took place between him and his companions. I told them I merely wished to find out the extent of the country they claimed; that I was not prepared either to admit their claim or deny it, but before we could negotiate, I must know what it was they pretended to own; that there were other Indian bands, especially toward the Lake of the Woods, who would probably claim some part of the territory he had described as belonging to his band. It then came out that their Chiefs—"Peguwis," near Lake Winnipeg, "Fox," of Prairie Portage, and "Grosse Oreille," of Oak Point, towards Lake of the Woods, and himself, agreed last winter upon a division of the country between them, and that his claim was to be limited to the country bounded by Scratching River and the Government Road on the north, Pembina Mountain on the west, White Mouth River on the east, and the American boundary on the south. I questioned him as to the bargain with Lord Selkirck, whereupon he appealed to an old man, who said he was present on

the occasion and remembered "My Lord," as he was called, only *borrowed* the land along the Red River, as far as he could see under a horse. I asked him how long it was understood the loan should continue? Another consultation took place among the Indians, and they answered, twenty or twenty-five years. To my question, whether any written record of the agreement was prepared, they said they had never seen any. He said his band numbered about six hundred souls, and that he could not make any cession of their rights without consultation with the other Chiefs. He mentioned the month of May as the most convenient time to meet them at Fort Garry, for a conference with me. As I learned that his band, excluding half-breeds, did not exceed half the number he had stated, I told him it would be necessary when he came to Fort Garry, to bring a list of the number of families and their names, and places of residence, who acknowledged him as their Chief, excluding American Indians and half-breeds. This he agreed to. I directed the Hudson's Bay Company's agent to give them some tobacco, flour, and tea, according to custom on such occasions. We all shook hands and the conference was at an end.

I then had a private interview with Colonel Dennis and Mr. Hallett, who had taken some rest in the meantime, and endeavoured to ascertain the precise object of the insurrectionary movement, and the probability of its present success. I confess that the verbal account of the condition of things at Fort Garry, the indecision and infirmity of the Governor, the hesitation and indifference of the merchants and English half-breeds, more than confirmed the impression I had derived from the correspondence, that there would be no measures taken to arrest the progress of the rebellion or resist any Government the French half-breeds might set up. Colonel Dennis expressed the opinion that the "Canadians" in the country could be relied upon, that they were fretting under the inactivity of the authorities, and would at once rally under any vigorous leader, who appealed to them in the name of law and order, and the authority of the Crown. But unfortunately their number was small, as compared with the insurgents, and they were much scattered over the country. The local Government had not even published a warning to the malcontent portion of the population, of the consequences which would be likely to follow this threatened resort to arms. No official statement of the nature of the arrangements with the Hudson's Bay Company, and of the authority under which it was made, had been published to remove the misapprehensions created in the minds of the half-breeds by designing men in the settlement. It was well known at Fort Garry, that American citizens had come into the country, ostensibly for purposes of trade, but in reality to create disaffection, and if possible, a movement for annexation to the United States. These men and their sympathizers, had been actively engaged in circulating stories, absurd as they were unfounded, to alarm the fears of the half-breeds, and excite their hostility against the Canadian Government. It was known that these stories had produced the desired effect, yet nothing appears to have been done by the Government to counteract them, beyond explanation and remonstrances verbally, and to a few individuals, some of whom it was believed, had entirely misrepresented to the ignorant half-breeds, the purport of their conversation with the Council. Neither Colonel Dennis nor Mr. Hallett could suggest anything better than a policy of inaction on my part until I heard the result of Mr. Provencher's mission.

The next day (Tuesday), about five o'clock in the afternoon, fourteen horsemen were seen approaching as from the direction of Fort Garry. It was soon evident that they were armed, and moving rapidly forward. As they approached, they slackened their pace, and dismounted at the gate of the stockade which surrounds the post, with their guns cocked, and in military order. In a few minutes, two of their number demanded an interview with me. They left their arms with their comrades at the gate, and were at once admitted. I invited them to a seat, and asked them what they wished to say to me. They replied, that they had been sent to tell me that I must leave the North-West Territory—I must go back before nine o'clock to-morrow morning. I asked them who had sent them with this message? They said, "The Committee—the Government." I asked, what Government? They said "The Government we have made." I asked, what they were instructed to do, if I declined to go back? They said, "they did not know—they

had no order." I then told them I was sent to assume the government of the country under the Queen of England, and by her authority, and I could not obey the orders of their Committee. I, at the same time, produced my commission under the Great Seal, and handed it to the captain for his perusal. He evidently could not read it, but the parchment and the seal seemed to convince him that it was what I described it to be. He handed it back, saying, that if his leaders had seen that, he thought they would not have opposed me—they did not wish to take up arms against the Queen. He added that I ought to have come on as far as the barricade, which I might have done without molestation. I told him, in reply, that I was going on as fast as I could, when I was stopped by a written order from his Committee, which I handed him to read. He read it, and remarked that he was not present when it was written, but admitted that it came from the National Committee, whose orders he obeyed. His companion having left the room, he seemed impatient to end the conversation, and rose to retire. I had asked their names, which they gave, without hesitation, as Lépine and Levallée. They were very respectful in their bearing, and seemed ashamed of the business they had in hand. I sent out to ask them if they would eat, which they said they would be glad to do, and I, accordingly, ordered some pork and bread and tea to be given to them. Hearing of their remarks to one another, that if they had known I was coming to represent the Queen as well as the Government of Canada, and that I was not sent to interfere with their religious or private rights, they would not have joined the insurgent party; and having observed the effect of the Great Seal upon the captain of the Band, I resolved to send for the whole party, and explain my position and authority to them in the same manner as I had done to the two leaders. They replied to my invitation, that they were tired, and that some of their party had gone to the village, and could not see me until the morning. About six o'clock the same evening, Mr. Provencher and Captain Cameron made their appearance at the post, escorted by six horsemen, who had conducted them as prisoners all the way from River Sale. These gentlemen had not been allowed to go beyond the barricade, or to hold any communication with the authorities at Fort Garry. Mr. Provencher's report of his mission and its result, is enclosed herewith, marked E.

About eight o'clock in the morning of Wednesday, the 3rd instant, loud talking was heard at the gateway, and on going out I found the rebel party, with their arms in their hands, drawn up in a half-circle, gesticulating fiercely, and threatening that, if we were not off by nine o'clock, they would not answer for our lives. I found that they had made a prisoner of Mr. Hallett, who went out to repeat my invitation of the evening before, and that he was then tied to a cart, and not allowed to speak to any of my party. Seeing their temper, and thinking it would not be prudent to give them an excuse for any further outrage, I ordered the horses to be harnessed, and we drove away from the Hudson's Bay Company's post towards Pembina, escorted by a portion of the party on foot. When I reached the post which had been set up to mark the 49th parallel, the captain of the band stopped, and addressing me in French, said, "You must not return beyond this line," pointing to the boundary monument. He further remarked, that he did not know me as Governor, but only as Mr. McDougall. As three or four persons had joined us on the way, but had no other connection with us, I asked if they also were interdicted from going on. He shrugged his shoulders, and said he didn't know; he would not prevent them, but perhaps they would be stopped at the River Sale. I then drove on, and my escort returned to the Hudson's Bay Company's post.

We encamped on the farm of Mr. Peter Hayden, an old Irish settler, who had been forty years in the territory, and had married the sister of the Indian Chief, Kewetaosh. He was very friendly to us, and strongly British in his feeling, though living on the American side of the boundary line. Here we have remained until to-day. The weather being cold and stormy, I have directed Colonel Dennis to hire a house for our protection, and stables for our horses, if they can be found in the neighborhood, of which I have some doubt. The village of Pembina consists of the house of the Postmaster, and another in which the Collector of Customs has his office. All the others, four or five in number, are mere huts, and offered very poor accommodation for their present occupants.

Our position is beset with difficulties. We cannot go forward without an armed force, which is not at our command. We cannot immediately return for our horses require rest and grain before we can undertake so long a journey. The snow may overtake us on the way, and rendered further progress with wagons impossible. There are no houses or supplies between this place and Georgetown, a distance of 150 miles. With the Canadians who joined me on the way, and who are now afraid to go forward, my party numbers twenty souls. Colonel Dennis is also with me, and will probably follow my fortunes, as he was ordered out of the country at the same time, and by the same authority. After surveying the situation, and deciding in my own mind upon the course which it was my duty to adopt, I held a council with Messrs. Richards and Provencher and Colonel Dennis. Captain Cameron being at some distance from us at the moment, and having acted upon his own judgment on more than one occasion against my advice, much to his own disadvantage as well as ours, I did not wait to consult him. I had previously sent Colonel Dennis to ascertain what supplies could be acquired in the neighborhood for our horses and party. He reported that the supply of tea, sugar, flour, salt and beef (fresh), which could be obtained at the Hudson's Bay Company's Post was sufficient for our wants, if the rebels did not seize them, or prevent us from getting possession of them. Only a few bushels of oats (about twenty) could be procured on either side of the line, but he heard that barley was more plentiful, although even that grain might be difficult to procure, if the farmers on the American side of the line proved to be, as we more than suspected they would, friendly to the insurgents and inimical to us.

Under this state of facts we decided:—1st, to get, if possible, the twenty bushels of oats already bargained for, as our horses were much in need of them. 2nd, to secure all the barley that we would hear of for future use. 3rd, to send down to the Hudson Bay Company's agent for all the groceries, flour, and beef we would require for three or four weeks at least. 4th, having secured a sufficient supply of provisions to enable us to reach St. Cloud, if we found it necessary to return to that point, we would there make ourselves as comfortable as possible under tents, or in houses, if they could be had, until we could hear from Fort Garry, and learn the effect of our expulsion upon the loyal portion of the people. We all agreed that it would be discouraging to our friends, and a great triumph for the rebels, if their first demonstration resulted in my return to Canada before I had assumed the reins of Government. We therefore resolved to remain at Pembina for a week or two longer, if we could get supplies. I may remark that I was shewn to-day written evidence that residents of the American village of Pembina are in constant communication with the leaders of what they call the "patriot army," at River Sale. A Mr. Stuttzman, an ex-official of the Treasury Department, who has resided here for some time, now doing business as a sort of village-lawyer, and reputed to be a man of considerable influence, met the insurgents as they rode up to the Hudson's Bay Company's Post on Tuesday, and held a short parley with them. We ascertained also that the leaders of the party went down and consulted with him and others at the village, as soon as they had delivered their message to me. This person now grants passes, addressed to the Commanding Officer of the Patriot Army, vouching for the good faith of his friends, and expressing his conviction that they are hostile to "Mr. Wm. McDougall." I have entrusted to one of my party, (who got into the confidence of Stuttzman, both being members of the same secret society, and obtained a pass from him,) two communications addressed to Governor McTavish, copies of which I enclose herewith, marked F and G. A slight disagreement with this person on the journey, which caused some talk in our party, had reached Stuttzman's ear, and made him the more ready to take this man into his confidence. I have, on the other hand, no doubt of his loyalty to me, and that if Col. Stuttzman's pass is recognized by the rebels, my letters will reach their destination.

LAROSE'S FARM, 1 Mile South of Pembina River,

November, 7th, 1869.

We were successful in obtaining our supplies, enough for two or three weeks, from the Hudson's Bay Company's Post. We got them over the lines in the night, with the aid of our Irish friend, who sent an ox-cart for them. The enemy's scouts, who were lurking about to watch our movements, were apparently deceived by this move, and allowed the cart to pass without examination. As soon as this point was gained, I ordered the tents to be struck, and the party removed to a position about a mile to the South of Pembina River, on the farm of one Larose, a Canadian, from Sault Ste. Marie. He is one-quarter Indian, but intelligent and friendly. He has consented to give us the use of his house, a new one, and will build a shanty for himself and family. He has also a stable for our horses, which, with a little improvement, can be made to answer our purpose. The house requires some alterations to accommodate the females and children of our party, even for a short time, which we have bargained to have made. Messrs. Richards, Provencher and Begg, have found temporary lodgings in the village, and Captain Cameron and his party are still under the shelter of the Irishman's cabin, which they share with a numerous family of half-breed children.

I have had a further communication from Fort Garry, of a later date than those brought by Colonel Dennis and Mr. Hallett. The mails have been stopped and opened by the rebel force, and I have no doubt that all letters to me or to any of my party have been opened and detained. I am now hourly expecting a messenger from Fort Garry, who will either pass the barricade as a friend of the rebels, or go round them as Colonel Dennis did. Rumors of all kinds reach us as may be supposed. The last is, that Fort Garry has been taken by the rebels, and Governor McTavish compelled to leave his house and the fort; that sentries are posted through the settlement, and at the house rented for me on the Assiniboine, and that there is no attempt at resistance from any quarter.

SUNDAY, 6 o'clock, P. M.

A messenger has just arrived from a point, about forty miles down the river. He brings a letter without signature, but understood to come from Dr. Schultz, and other Canadians? (see paper marked H). This paper confirms the story of the surrender of Fort Garry, and the continued inaction and helplessness of the authorities.

I replied in a short note, without signature, by the same messenger, apprising the writer of the letter, that it was my intention to remain here for the present, that I could not assume or believe that the Hudson's Bay Company's agents desired the success of the rebels, or gave them any assistance, except under compulsion; that I had opened communications with the authorities, and had suggested a Proclamation by them, explaining the change of Government, and the character in which I was sent, and warning the malcontents of the consequences of their acts—that at the proper time, I would issue a Manifesto or Proclamation myself, await the effect, and be guided by circumstances. I requested the same parties to communicate with me as often as they found opportunity, but to act rather than recriminate. I at the same time addressed a short note to the Governor, McTavish, fearing that my previous letters might have failed to reach him. (See paper marked I.) I arranged with the messenger, who is an intelligent and loyal German half-breed, to keep open a private channel of communication, if possible, with the settlement during my stay here.

From the foregoing narrative, and the papers enclosed, His Excellency will be able to appreciate the difficulties by which I am surrounded, and the grave questions which may soon present themselves for his consideration. While I hope to receive a message that the "Émeute" is at an end, and that the authority of the Crown will be recognized in my person by those who are now in arms. I confess there are facts in the case which point strongly to a different result.

I may observe in conclusion, that apprehending the possibility of some such inter-

ruption as I have encountered. I arranged at St. Cloud for the transport of the arms and ammunition to Georgetown, there to await my orders. They are now in possession of the Hudson Bay Company's Agent at that port, and not likely to fall into the hands of the rebels. If I hear of any attempt on their part to get possession of them, I shall take steps to remove them if possible to Fort Abercrombie.

I have the honor to be, Sir,

Your obedient Servant,

WM. McDOUGALL.

To the Honorable the Secretary of State for the Provinces,
Ottawa, Canada.

(A.)

FORT GARRY, RED RIVER,

30th October, 1869.

The Honorable William McDougall, C.B.

MY DEAR SIR,—It is with much concern I have to say that, among a certain portion of the half-breed population here, there prevails a degree of excitement at the prospect of your arrival in the country, which seems to make it necessary that in coming into the settlement, you should use great circumspection; and it is for the purpose of pointing attention to that apparent necessity that I send you this communication.

For some weeks past, rumors have been reaching me through more or less reliable channels, of dissatisfaction among the French half-breeds with the recent arrangements; but believing, as I then did, that these feelings had no very deep root, I indulged the hope that they might pass away. But in this respect, I am deeply pained to say, I have been disappointed, and that, within the last few days, the feeling of discontent has manifested itself in such a manner as to create serious apprehensions for the result. After interfering with the surveying operations of Col. Dennis, these people, in considerable numbers, have combined for the avowed purpose of stopping your entrance into the settlement, and with that view they have actually taken up permanent positions on the road by which, in the usual course of travel, you would advance.

Ever since matters began to assume a serious aspect, the conduct of these people has been, I may say, constantly engaging the earnest deliberations of the local authorities, but although every effort has been made which the Council deemed prudent or practicable for bringing these misguided people to reason, and for procuring their peaceable dispersion, yet I am sorry to say that, hitherto, all has been without effect, and that the difficulty, the serious and now somewhat alarming difficulty, still remains unsolved, as to how you are to be effectually protected from molestation in approaching the settlement.

From Col. Dennis I learn that, by different hands he has lately been sending you reports upon the state of matters here, and that in his last communication he has advised you to remain in Pembina, until you should ascertain, through reliable intelligence from this, by some means or other, the course has been cleared so as to make it prudent for you to come on. It appears to me that under the circumstances, the advice so tendered by Col. Dennis was sound and judicious, and it relieved my mind from much anxiety to hear that officer express so confident a belief that you would be inclined to act upon it; although I cannot but add that I fully share in his feeling of mortification at being so circumstanced as to be constrained to counsel such a course.

I have not myself seen Col. Dennis's communications to you on the subject of these unfortunate occurrences, but he has been kind enough to read them to some members of the council, for the purpose of enabling them to judge of the accuracy and completeness of his information; and upon their assurance, I have no hesitation in saying that the contents of the Colonel's communication to you may be relied upon as conveying in the main a correct narrative of the occurrences to which they refer, and a fair representation of the popular sentiment throughout the settlement.

The question which now presses itself upon every mind is, what is to be done to

secure your peaceable entrance into the settlement? So far, all our expedients have failed; and unless the efforts of a temporizing character which are still being earnestly used for the dispersion of the malcontents succeed, it is to be feared that your coming into the settlement, at the present moment, would not be free from considerable danger.

From Col. Dennis's despatches and this letter you will derive as full and accurate knowledge of the position of the affairs here as I believe can very well be given in writing; and having satisfied myself that you are acquainted with all the material circumstances of the case, I think that you are now in possession of the principal data for enabling you to determine the important question of your movements; and I need not say that I shall most anxiously await your decision.

But without, of course, in any way meaning to prescribe the line to be pursued, I may be permitted to add that to those who with myself have been deliberating upon the most advisable steps to be taken in circumstances of so embarrassing and so critical a nature, there have been suggested three courses for meeting the difficulty as it now stands.

The first is, that, there happily being among even the French half-breeds a considerable element of well-disposed persons, there should be carefully selected from that section a body of from twenty to thirty men, who, mounted and armed, should proceed to Pembina and escort you to your residence in the settlement by a roundabout road, which would keep you entirely clear from the roads on which the malcontents are known to have taken up their positions.

The second is, that of making a public call upon the whole loyal portion of the settlement to turn out in the cause of order, and to the number of, say 300 unarmed able-bodied men, if such a force could be mustered, proceed to Pembina and escort you into the settlement by the usual route, whether the malcontents remain upon it or not.

And the third is, that you should remain at Pembina and await the issue of conciliatory negotiations, with the view of procuring a peaceable dispersion of the malcontents.

Now, with respect to the first of these courses, it is in my opinion, open to the grave objection, that even if it were to issue in your safe arrival amongst us, it would obviously involve a virtual acknowledgment of the ascendancy of these lawless people, and would have a direct tendency to inspire them with fresh courage in the prosecution of their designs: and besides, I am strongly of opinion that, under present circumstances, your personal safety could not be sufficiently provided for by the attendance of so small a body of men as that proposed—a body large enough to provoke a collision, but probably far from strong enough to meet it.

The second is one which all along the local authorities have been pondering, but one which, as in somewhat similar emergencies on former occasions, they have hitherto shrunk from adopting, partly from a misgiving as to the extent and the spirit of the response to such a call as that proposed, and partly also, but principally, from an apprehension of precipitating a collision between different sections of the people, which might plunge not only the settlement, but the whole Territory, into all the disasters of a war of races and religions—a war, in which the legitimate object for which it had been begun would probably soon be lost sight of, and passion and prejudice alone animate the minds of those engaged in it.

To the Council and myself it appears that, under present circumstances, the third proposal is the only one that can be regarded as prudent or practicable; and it is therefore our opinion that you should remain at Pembina and await the issue of conciliatory negotiations, in the hope of procuring a peaceable dispersion of the malcontents.

I have only to add that, although this letter proceeds ostensibly from myself, it embodies the views of the Council of Assiniboine, and that, at a meeting of the Council to-day, held for the express purpose, it was unanimously adopted as the communication which I should immediately make you.

Earnestly hoping that ere long some peaceable solution of all these difficulties may be arrived at.

I remain, my dear Sir, yours faithfully,

W. McTAVISH.

[B]

THURSDAY, 28th October.

The situation remains unchanged. I sent down, about 9 o'clock, provisions for Mr. Dease's party, consisting of one bag of flour, a quarter of beef, and a small quantity of tea and sugar. Called upon Dr. Cowan about 11 o'clock, and found with him Judge Black. Was informed that the Governor having written a note for Père Ritchot to come down and see him, that priest was there with him. Mr. McBeth, a member of the Council, called at Dr. Cowan's while I was there, and the conversation turned upon the necessity of advising Mr. McDougall, from the Council, or some other official source, as to the situation of affairs here, so that that gentleman would receive it before he came to Pembina. I stated that I had prepared, from day to day, a statement of facts and circumstances connected with the outbreak, which I had taken the opportunity to send forward so as to meet Mr. McDougall, I thought, in good time, and that in order to let the Council see to what extent I had put Mr. McDougall in possession of the facts; I had no objection, although I had no intention when writing of making it public, to show them the statement referred to. They expressed a desire to that effect, and I accordingly sent for the statement and read it. I was glad to find that the feeling was unanimous that the statement of facts and views which I had sent forward was, without exception, approved as truthful and reliable. Judge Black remarking that the Council could add nothing to the statement calculated to give Mr. McDougall a more accurate description of the state of affairs. 5 p.m., Judge Black has just called to say that the Governor failed, after some three hours' interview with Père Ritchot, to bring him and his party to reason. He says also, that Mr. Dease has informed him that the insurgent party have made an overture to the effect that if they, the peace party, will join them in turning Mr. McDougall out of the Territory at a subsequent time, should he refuse to accede to their present demands, they will allow him to enter in the meantime. This, however, Mr. Black mentioned that he had advised Mr. Dease could not be consented to, as it might involve precisely the same outrage as that at present contemplated. It was understood that Mr. Dease would see the refractory party again this evening, and endeavour to get them to consent to make their proposition less objectionable.

Friday, 29th October. The negotiations spoken of last evening ended in nothing. Mr. Dease reports that, based upon the statements, which he had reason to believe emanated from Père Ritchot last evening, the assertion is made by that party that Governor McFavish is favourable to their designs. I am not sure from Mr. Dease's manner that I succeeded in convincing him of what I am convinced myself, that nothing is further from the fact. If Mr. Ritchot made any such assertion, he has stated it for the purpose of intentionally misleading his party and maintaining his control over them.

Sent another day's supply of provisions down for Mr. Dease's party. Was invited to meet, at the Fort at 9 o'clock this morning, some members of the Council; these were Mr. Sutherland, Mr. Fraser, Dr. Cowan, Mr. Dease, and Judge Black. After some conversation, it was arranged that Messrs. Fraser and Sutherland should visit the camp of the disaffected, and endeavour to impress them with the fact that the English speaking element in the settlement was entirely opposed to their views and their proceedings, and see what they could do to bring them to reason. I have provided Mr. Wm. Hallett and the Cree chief, Fox, with conveyance, and they have also gone up to have an interview with the insurgents for a like purpose. 3 p.m. Charles Donald, an English half-breed, resident in Mapleton Parish, down below Lower Fort, who had been instructed by Mr. Dease to notify all of the well-disposed half-breeds in his part of the settlement to be in readiness to turn out if called upon to join his party, has just arrived from below on his way up to the insurgents to deliver them a letter, of which that on page 458 is a copy.* Complaining that his horse, having been carrying him for the last two days and one night, was exhausted, he left his horse, and I lent him another. 9 p.m. Messrs. Fraser and Sutherland have called, bringing the accompanying note from Dr. Cowan.† These gentle-

* Sic in original.

† Not received.

men state that, on their visiting the insurgent camp, they were met by Père Ritchot, who took them into a private room in his own house, in part of which was the chapel, and declining for a long time to bring them face to face with the leaders in this movement; used every effort to persuade them that it would be impossible to get them to withdraw from the stand they had taken. The gentlemen insisted, however, and at length was shown by the priest upstairs, in the same building, into what he termed the committee room; here were sitting, in a very formal way, the committee consisting of ten members. The gentlemen announced the purpose of their visit, but were told that no business could be done in the absence of the chairman, who came in shortly after and proved to be the man formerly mentioned, named John Bruce. Messrs. Fraser and Sutherland then proceeded to put several questions as to the object and purposes of the party. Not a single reply could be obtained to any of these, and at length it became difficult for them to get a hearing at all. It seemed as if the leaders, Bruce and Riel, the latter also being in the room, were afraid to allow these gentlemen to speak for fear their arguments might lead to a defection in their camp. Mr. Wm. Hallett was also present, and commenced addressing the committee, most of the members being well known to him, in the Indian language, but they refused to allow him to go on. The voice of the priest being heard from the room below, where he had been evidently listening to the proceedings, calling out, "why do you not speak in French?" After spending the whole day there to no purpose, Messrs. Fraser and Sutherland returned. They report the strength of the party, every member of which, so far as they saw, was completely armed, at about one hundred and fifty men. Mr. Hallett and the chief have also returned, and corroborate in every way the statements made by Messrs. Fraser and Sutherland. Mr. Hallett tells me that the chief, Fox, spoke effectively in his native language to the insurgents outside; they did not leave the camp until some time after the gentlemen named. Mr. Hallett tells me that he saw signs of wavering among some of the subordinate leaders of the refractory party, and thinks there is good reason to believe that the feeling will increase, with all the influences that are being brought to bear in its favor by the other half-breeds, and that it will lead to the enterprise being abandoned. Mr. Hallett informs me also that the insurgent party had sent out to get in the chief, "Grosse Oreille," and his people to join their side, and the chief with ten of his men came in accordingly. On learning, however, the character of the proceedings, the chief declined to identify himself with it at all, and he and his men withdrew from that party and were at a house near there, where he (Hallett) and the chief, "Fox," had an interview with him last night. These men sent a written paper to me by Hallett, conveying sentiments with regard to this movement (see memorandum attached in French).* I have every reason to believe that all the Indians cognizant of the designs of the insurgents, are entirely opposed to them. Whether in the future, should the affair take a more serious turn, the priests will be able to take them over remains to be seen. Hallett says, and his statement is corroborated by Messrs. Fraser and Sutherland, that the Priest Ritchot remarked that Mr. McDougall might perhaps come in by some other route, and indicated by his language that in such case they would not follow him as to their present intentions.

Saturday, 30th October, at Fort at 9 A.M., met Dr. Cowan and the Recorder. The Père Lestanc, the Red River being difficult to cross on account of the ice forming, had remained all night with the Governor, and had just left with the promise to the latter that all the efforts and influence that his position could bring to bear, would be applied to putting a stop to the disturbance.—I was informed that all the members of the Council that could be got together by 11 o'clock, were being sent for to attend a special meeting called for that hour.—The chiefs, "Grosse Oreille" and the "Fox" being both in Town, I made a point of seeing them and presenting them each with a new blanket, some provisions, and some other trifling articles.

5 P.M., saw Dr. Cowan and the Recorder at the Fort. The result of the meeting of Council was the drawing up of a letter to Mr. McDougall, which was read to me, in

* Not furnished.

which he was informed of the position of affairs and different courses of action suggested for his consideration. That letter goes forward to-night, and, for fear of miscarriage, a duplicate will follow by the mail on Monday. Père Lestanc, in accordance with the promise which he had made this morning, came over to the Fort this evening to the Governor, and found it necessary to express his regrets, as I understand, that all efforts he had been able to bring to bear had been of no avail.

The party under Père Ritchot as yet shew not the slightest inclination to give way, but on the contrary, by their language and the fact of their having stopped some of the carts with goods and detained them unnecessarily are creating annoyance in the minds of those who have been disposed to stand aloof; which annoyance may yet take shape and tend to increase the difficulties.

J. S. DENNIS.

[C.]

Address to Col.
Dennis of British
residents in the
Town of Winni-
peg, offering their
services to pro-
ceed to Pembina
and escort into
the Red River
Settlement Lieut
Gov. McDougall.
Rec. 27th Oct. '69.

To Colonel Dennis.

We, the undersigned British Subjects, members of a meeting held at the Garret House, Town of Winnipeg, this evening, in accordance with a resolution passed to that effect, beg to inform you that we are ready at your call to proceed to Pembina to escort Governor McDougall into this Settlement.

FORT GARRY, October 27th, 1869.

22 Signatures.

[D.]*

[E.]

The Hon. Wm. McDougall, C.B., &c., Pembina.

SIR,—I have the honor to report, that according to your instructions of the 30th ult., I left the Fort of Pembina, with the intention of going as far as possible in the direction of Fort Garry, and there to meet the leaders of the so-called half-breed party. After I had proceeded a few miles from Pembina, I noticed that all my movements were closely watched by scouts, constantly communicating from one point to another. These scouts were on horseback. At about 5 o'clock p.m., one of those mounted scouts began to follow my wagon. He refused to give his name, but said it was his intention to accompany me as far as Sale River, where the barricade was established. Not being able to go as far as that point that evening, I put up during the night at a house near the road. Every precaution was taken by the proprietor of the house, who appeared to be connected with the insurgent movement, to prevent my escape during the night. They were especially afraid of my going to Fort Garry, as one of their first objects was to prevent every communication between the authorities there and yourself.

In the morning I went to the place called Sale River, where I found a fence across the road, and a guard of about thirty or forty footmen. I immediately got out of my wagon, and asked for the chief officer in command. The answer was, that I would be conducted to him at the house he occupied. It was about four or five minutes walk beyond the fence alluded to. I told my driver to wait for me, but they told him to follow with the wagon. I was accompanied by a guard of ten or fifteen men, all armed with guns, rifles and pistols of various kinds. I was asked to assist at the church service just beginning to which I assented. I talked with several men who I had reason to believe were leaders of the insurgents or in some way connected with them. I was surprised that they did not know what had been done, either in the Canadian or Imperial Parliaments, relating to the North West-Territory. They only

PEMBINA, November 3rd, 1869.

knew that Canada had paid to the Hudson's Bay Company £300,000, for their rights in that country.

I explained to them that the Imperial Parliament had authorized the transfer of the North-West Territories to Canada, and that the Canadian Parliament and the Hudson's Bay Company had agreed upon the terms of transfer. I insisted that the Government, when established by the issuing of the proclamation to that effect, would represent the Crown of England and the Government of Canada, but that Canada only being substituted to the rights of the Crown and the Company, could not and would not interfere with the religious or private rights of citizens. I added also that many members of the New Council would be taken from amongst the population of this country, so as to represent as faithfully as possible all the various interests of the people, and that the policy of the Canadian Government could be ascertained by their general dealings with other Provinces, and by the speeches of ministers on this very question. The people of Canada would only be too glad to be relieved of a portion of their responsibility, by granting to those people free political institutions and self government as soon as practicable.

They immediately seemed to see the matter in quite another light, but they uniformly answered that it was too late, and that the insurrectionary movement had taken such proportions as to prevent any peaceful settlement at present. I was told in the meantime that a new Government was already organized, that a new constitution had been drafted, that elections had taken place, and that they were in negotiation with the English and Protestant half-breeds, to arrange all matters relating to languages, nationality or religion. The same committee, I was told, had also to decide what they would do in relation to my mission.

The general complaint of those men, as far as I could ascertain, was, that they had not been consulted on the new political changes about to take place. They said they tolerated the Government of the Company from the mere fact of its existence, and because in reality the charges were so light that they had no reason to ask for a change, though for many years they had agitated the question of electing their representatives in the Council of Assiniboine, and now they were resolved to take advantage of the recent changes to realize that desire. They said, moreover, that they had been greatly abused by a few people, looked upon as representing the views of the Canadian Government, and that they had been led to fear that great danger would arise to them from the establishment of the new contemplated Government. Under those circumstances they decided to prevent at once any possibility of establishing that new form of Government, by not allowing the newly appointed Governor to come into the country.

About four (4) o'clock p.m., I was introduced to the President of the so-called special committee of the half-breeds, who began by asking me in what capacity I was there. I explained what was your mission and my own. When he told me that as the newly appointed chief of the half-breeds he could not acknowledge the validity of any proceedings of the Canadian Government towards them, nor our appointment. Nevertheless, if the Canadian Government was willing to do it, they were ready to open negotiations with them, or with any person vested with full powers, in view of settling the terms of their coming into the Dominion of Canada.

I was told, moreover, that they would only receive such persons as representatives of the Canadian Government as they approved of for the purpose of negotiation, and that certain persons would be peremptorily objected to. Immediately after that interview, which lasted about twenty minutes, I was told I must leave at once for the Fort at Pembina. I heard afterwards that the crowd had been calling for me for two hours, and that they were very anxious to see me away. I left with a guard of thirteen armed men on horseback. Seven of them left next morning, and six came along with me as far as Fort Pembina, where I arrived the second day of November, at six o'clock p.m.

I have the honor to be, Sir,

Your most obedient Servant,

J. A. N. PROVENCHER.

[F.]

PEMBINA, 2nd November, 1869.

Governor McTavish, &c., Fort Garry.

MY DEAR SIR,—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt, by the hands of Col. Dennis, of your letter of the 30th October, announcing the assemblage of a body of armed men upon the public road near Fort Garry, for the avowed purpose of preventing my entrance into the settlement. Col. Dennis had already apprised me of the movements and designs of these people, and, as you state that his communications to me had been shown to, and approved as to the statements contained, by the members of your council, I have no doubt that I am now in possession of sufficient information to enable me to understand the origin and nature of the outbreak which your Government has been unable to prevent, and which obstructs, for the present, my further progress into the country.

I have acted upon the suggestion of Col. Dennis (repeated and confirmed by you), that I should delay a few days at Pembina, in the hope that the measures you have taken may result in the withdrawal of the armed parties from their present position. As you are aware, the transfer of the Territory and the powers of government entrusted to you is to take effect on a day to be named in Her Majesty's Royal Proclamation, until that day arrives (which I am informed will be about the 1st day of December next), you are the legal ruler of the country, and responsible for the preservation of the public peace. My commission authorizes and commands me to assume and exercise the powers of government from and after that day. I am instructed to proceed in the meantime to the Territory and report on certain subjects, and make preparations for the new state of things.

In these circumstances you will see that the legal authority to resist any lawless exhibition of force which may occur previous to the actual transfer of the powers of government, is in other hands than mine. You have not, it appears, felt justified in calling upon the loyal and well-disposed inhabitants of the country to aid you in the suppression of the outbreak of which you have notified me. I must, therefore, conclude that your better knowledge of the disposition of the people and of the means at your disposal to enforce your authority, convinces you that such a call would prove ineffectual; but I cannot help thinking that a proclamation from your Government, explaining the provisions of the late Imperial Act respecting the Territory, and the authority under which the new Government will exercise its powers, at the same time warning the malcontents of the serious nature of the crime they meditated, and the grave consequences to all concerned, that must result from its commission, would have been well-timed, and perhaps sufficient to prevent the designing men at the head of this movement from accomplishing their purposes. I understand from Col. Dennis that no proclamation or warning has as yet been published at Fort Garry, under official sanction.

I am unwilling, at this distance from the scene of action, and in the circumstances by which I am surrounded, to make any other suggestion. Perhaps the measures you have taken may prove successful.

I sincerely hope they may, and remain,

My dear Sir,

Very faithfully, &c., &c., &c.,

WM. MCDUGALL.

[G.]

PEMBINA, 4th November, 1869.

Governor McTavish, &c., Fort Garry.

MY DEAR SIR,—Since my letter of the 2nd instant was written, and before I found an opportunity to send it forward, events have occurred which alter somewhat the situation of affairs. In the afternoon of that day, a body of horsemen (armed), to the number of fourteen, galloped up to the Hudson's Bay Company's post at which I was

quartered, and demanded an interview with me. Two of their number, apparently recognized as leaders, who gave their names, at my request, as Lépine and Lavallée, stated that they had been sent to tell me to go back—that I must not remain in the post later than nine o'clock the next day. I asked them who sent them, and by what authority. They said their leaders sent them, and their authority was the *Government*. I asked, what Government? They replied, "The Government we have made." I told them I could not obey the orders of their Government, as I was sent by the authority of the Queen, to administer the Government in her name, at the same time exhibiting my commission under the Great Seal, and explaining its terms. The captain of the band looked at the seal and parchment, and made an effort to read the document, but soon handed it back with the remark, that if I had come on and shewn the Queen's Commission to his leaders, he thought they would not have opposed me—that they did not wish to oppose the Queen's authority. He added, that I could have done so without any risk. I added, that I was going on as fast as I could, when I was notified by his so-called leaders not to proceed further, shewing him at the same time a letter from the "National Committee," by order of John Bruce, President, and Louis Riel, Secretary, which was put in my hands at Pembina, immediately on my arrival. He seemed a little nonplussed by this, but merely said he was not present when the letter was written. I asked him what he was ordered to do in the event of my refusal to quit the Territory. He said he had no orders, and his companion having left the room a few minutes before, took his leave somewhat abruptly.

Noticing the effect of the exhibition of my Commission, and the remark that his party did not wish to oppose the authority of the Crown, I determined to invite the whole party (by this time increased to twenty by the arrival of those who escorted Mr. Provencher and Captain Cameron) to a friendly conference, in order to make known to them the truth as to my position and their own. But they excused themselves to the messenger, by saying that the party was scattered and tired, and would see me in the morning. As it drew near eight o'clock in the morning, they, seeing no preparations for our departure, surrounded the gateway, and vociferously demanded that we should leave before nine o'clock. The leader stated that his orders were positive, and he would not be answerable for our lives, if we remained. They had, in the meantime, made a prisoner of Mr. Hallett, who went out to speak to them preparatory to the proposed conference, and seeing that they were not disposed to hold any parley, and might possibly commit some further outrage, I ordered my horses to be got ready, and without waiting for breakfast, proceeded across the line towards Pembina, escorted by a portion of the party, with arms in their hands. On reaching the post which marks the international boundary, they stopped, and warned me not to return beyond that point, remarking that they did not know me as Governor, but only as Mr. McDougall.

Col. Dennis was told that he must accompany me, which he accordingly did, and remains with me. Mr. Hallett, who for some time had been tied to a cart, and was forbidden to speak with any of my people, was sent off towards Fort Garry, under armed escort.

I am now encamped a short distance from the boundary line, on the farm of Mr. Hayden, and intend to remain in the neighbourhood till I learn what action your Government and the loyal people of the Territory may have taken on receiving intelligence of these events. I need only say that if the people now in the Territory tamely submit to the Government these half-breeds have, or pretend they have established, I have no force at my command, and at present no authority, to resist it or them. The operations, military or otherwise, which must ensue, you can guess without any suggestions from me. I have reported the facts as they have reached me to the proper authorities.

I may add, for your information, that I have good reason to believe that there are persons on the American side of the line actively engaged in fomenting these disturbances, and that there are, also, persons of some influence in the settlement in correspondence with them. Their avowed object is to bring about annexation of the Territory, or some part of it to the United States. I cannot learn that the French half-

breeds have contemplated this as the result of their movement, but it is well to know all the influences and motives at work.

I trust that you will take measures to keep me advised of what is going on beyond the barricade, and whether, in your opinion, any useful purpose will be served by my remaining here for any length of time.

I have many details for verbal communication, which you will, no doubt, receive from reliable quarters, not being sure that that this will reach you unread by others.

I have the honor to be

Very respectfully yours, &c.,

WM. McDUGALL.

[H.]

To the Honorable William McDougall, C.B., Pembina.

We, as friends, would advise you by the bearer, who is a reliable man, as to the position of affairs here. The insurgents have taken possession of Fort Garry, and established sentries at its gates. No opposition offered by the officers of the Company, although informed that such events would take place twelve hours before. The town is also occupied by the rebels; so far no disturbance has occurred. Considerable wavering among the half-breeds of Riel's party, on account of Mr. Provencher not being allowed to address them in public, and many would be glad to go quietly to their homes. The rebels call a general meeting about Monday next, and will then demand an expression of the whole settlement, which we will take care to have present, and have no doubt that a large majority will be in your favor, and advise you strongly to await the result at Pembina.

The Hudson's Bay Company are evidently with the rebels, and their present *voie* is to prevent your having any official intercourse with them. It is said that the rebels will support the Government of the Hudson's Bay Company as it now exists. All the subordinates in the party say that, if you have a Commission from Her Majesty to enter here as Governor, they will lay down their arms. Riel and the other leaders allow them to know nothing. If the Proclamation can be issued here, and the Hudson's Bay Company Government officially called on to act, they (the Hudson's Bay Company) would be forced to suppress the insurrection, and they can easily do it.

The actual number of the disaffected do not exceed 250 men, all told, and the slightest opposition would reduce that number to the original 40, including the priests and their head.

The supporters of the rebels in town begin to manifest considerable anxiety. Our opinion is that the Proclamation should be forwarded by the bearer, and we will see it placarded here. Send duplicate copies to Portage la Prairie by a trusty man to ***

On no account leave Pembina till you have established official communication with the Hudson's Bay Company. Any such sent by the bearer will be duly handed to them.

We are friends of the Canadian Government.

5th November, Winnipeg.

[L.]

PEMBINA, November 7th, 1869.

Governor McTavish, &c.

MY DEAR SIR,—I avail myself of this opportunity to inform you that I have been compelled, by an armed party of 20 men, to leave the Hudson's Bay Company's Post here, and recross the line. I am now in American territory, and shall remain here for the present. I wrote you two letters, both in one envelope, detailing the proceedings and

position of things here, and suggesting a Proclamation from your Government, explaining the nature of the change in the Government, and warning the malcontents of the consequences of their acts. I was disappointed to hear from those who met me that they had not been informed by any one in authority that the change of Government was an Imperial act, and had the sanction of the Queen. I also reminded you and your Council, that until the actual Transfer and Proclamation, you are the legal Rulers, and responsible for the preservation of the public peace. I am surprised to learn, from a communication brought by the bearer of this, that a few rebels have been allowed to take your Fort, unopposed, even by public protest. Of course, I am not in the best position to judge or advise in such a crisis; but in the hope that, by some means, the people will find out what it is they are doing, and will shrink from the consequences of war and bloodshed, and confiscation, which are sure to follow. I shall remain here until I hear officially of the transfer of authority, and shall then be guided by circumstances as to what I shall say and do.

Hoping to hear full details of what has occurred, and what you advise to be done there as well as here.

I remain,
Very respectfully yours,
WM. McDUGALL.

PEMBINA VILLAGE, U.S.,
11th November, 1869.

The Honorable the Minister of Customs, Ottawa.

SIR,—I have the honor to report that I reached Pembina on the 30th ult., *en route* for Fort Garry, in company with Governor McDougall and party.

You are, doubtless, aware of the circumstances which prevented us from proceeding onward; and how we were driven from the Hudson's Bay Company's Post, back again across the boundary line into the United States, by an armed party of twenty half-breeds.

The Governor will remain here for some time yet, to await results. Of course, I have no alternative but remain with him, and will be guided by his movements and advice.

Expenses have been so far very heavy. Everything at war prices. By the time I can hear from your Department in answer to this, my funds will be exhausted. Please send remittances to be accounted for.

I have the honor to be, Sir,
Your most obedient Servant,
ALEXANDER BEGG,
Collector.

OFFICE OF THE SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES,
Ottawa, November 29th, 1869.

The Hon. William McDougall, C.B., Pembina.

Received by Mr. McDougall, 16th December. SIR,—I had the honor to receive on Friday, your despatches of the 5th and 7th November, the former dated from Pembina, and the latter from Larose's Farm. Eight enclosures, including your correspondence with Governor McTavish, and the reports made to you by Colonel Dennis and Mr. Provencher, also came safe to hand.

These papers were at once laid before His Excellency the Governor General and Council, and were anxiously considered by the Privy Council. The crisis was grave as it was unexpected, and might, if dealt with rashly and unwisely, lead to a civil if not a national war, the end of which no man could foresee.

It was the first duty of the Government to acquaint Her Majesty's Ministers with the facts reported, and a cable message was sent at once by the Governor General to the Secretary of State for the Colonies, and copies of all the papers have been forwarded by the mail for England, which left Ottawa this morning.

The insurrection you describe is not merely an expression of dislike to the Government of the Dominion, but an open violation of Imperial Legislation and defiance to the authority of the Crown. All the negotiations for the transfer of this country had proceeded with the sanction of Her Majesty's Government, and the purchase money had been raised under an Imperial Guarantee. It was assumed, on both sides, that the Queen's right of Sovereignty was indisputable, and that Her power to protect Her subjects, even in that distant part of Her Dominions, would be asserted with firmness and decision. It therefore appeared to the Privy Council unwise to complicate matters by any hasty action, until the policy of the Queen's Government was known.

The Governor General is still in telegraphic communication with the Secretary of State, and I may be able, before closing this despatch, to convey to you, with some degree of clearness and accuracy, the views of Her Majesty's Government.

In the meantime I have it in command to express to you the anxious desire of the Governor General in Council, that all collision with the insurgents may be avoided, and that no violation of the neutrality laws of the United States shall give a pretext for the interference of their Government.

This will be handed to you by a special messenger, who, as he speaks French fluently and is a gentleman of some experience, may be of some service.

You will for the present remain at Pembina, cheered by the conviction which animates us here, that Her Majesty's Government will duly estimate the gravity of the facts reported, and take such steps as will, while carefully providing for the good government of the North-West, maintain the authority and vindicate the honor of the Crown.

I have the honor, to be, Sir,

Your most obedient Servant,

JOSEPH HOWE.

P.S.—The Messenger cannot leave for a day or two. The Duplicate will be sent by him.

LAROSE'S FARM, PEMBINA, 9th November, 1869.

*The Honorable the Secretary of State for the Provinces,
Ottawa, Canada.*

SIR,—I have the honor to report that, in accordance with the 13th paragraph of my instructions, I have taken measures for the extension of the Telegraph system "from the Territory to Pembina, and for its connection at that place with the system of the American Telegraph Company or Companies" by making "a provisional arrangement for that purpose with the North-Western Telegraph Company," whose lines now extend as far West as St. Cloud in Minnesota.

Some time before leaving Ottawa, I had an interview with Mr. Wood, one of the Directors of the North-Western Telegraph Company, and enquired of him as to the position of his Company, and the probability of its lines being soon extended to Red River. He promised to confer with his co-directors and let me know the intentions of the Company, and the conditions, if any, under which they would extend their system to Pembina or Fort Garry. I mentioned to Mr. Wood that the Government, under their agreement with the Hudson's Bay Company, would acquire a large quantity of Telegraph wire and insulators, which I was informed had been sent to and was then at Fort Garry. The

enclosed letter marked "A" is the result of that conversation, and having been forwarded to me from the Department of Public Works, after my appointment to my present office, was made the basis of the arrangement which I concluded with the Company while *en route* to this place. I communicated at Chicago with the President of the North-Western Telegraph Company, and after discussing the subject with him, under different aspects, I finally wrote the letter marked "B," accepting some of the conditions of the proposal made by the Company, and demanding a modification of others. I read the draft of this letter to the President, as I was about to leave Chicago, and to meet some of his objections, added the memorandum marked "BB.," as he was not ready to close finally the arrangement without further consultation with his colleagues; and as I wished to make some further enquiries, I agreed to write him from St. Paul, and close the matter one way or the other. The letter "B," with the memorandum "BB.," was enclosed to Mr. Simmons, (Pres. N. W. T. C.) accompanied by the private note, marked "C," from St. Paul, and its receipt was acknowledged, and the agreement closed by the telegram "F" which I received at St. Cloud. The letter "E," from Mr. Simmons, overtook me at Pembina, where I have been delayed by circumstances which have been explained in my previous reports.

It will be observed that under the agreement which I have concluded, subject to the approval of His Excellency in Council, no money is stipulated to be paid by the Canadian Government to the Company for the construction of the line. It will be observed, also, that for a distance of nearly 300 miles, to wit, from Breckenridge to Fort Garry, there are no towns or villages on American Territory, and no business prospects, therefore, to induce the Company to extend its lines beyond Breckenridge, where the Western Railway system will, for the present, terminate. The profits on the business, which under the most favourable view is likely to be supplied by the British settlement on Red River, would not warrant any Company in constructing and maintaining 300 miles of telegraph line. The basis on which the President of the Company wished to conclude the agreement was the contribution of *one-half* the cost of a line from St. Cloud to Fort Garry by each of the parties. His proposition (per letter A,) would, according to the Company's estimate of cost, have divided it about in that proportion. But I represented to him that the Company would in all probability extend their line to Breckenridge at their own cost, very soon after the completion of the railway, and that the problem to be solved by us was the completion of the line between Breckenridge and Fort Garry. To meet the difficulty which seemed to be insuperable, without the organization of a new Company and the raising of a capital of at least \$50,000, I proposed to find the wire for the whole line, but for the portion south of Breckenridge to charge the Company for it, the cost price to us, and take our pay in telegraphing. As we have a larger quantity of wire at Fort Garry, according to information which has reached me, than will be required for the fulfilment of the bargain, I thought it good policy to sell 200 miles of it in the way proposed. It turns into money, or money's worth, what would otherwise remain useless on our hands, and subject to deterioration. Attention is directed to the important stipulation for a rebate of 75 per cent. on public documents and despatches exceeding 60 words. It occurred to me that occasionally it may happen that great public advantage will result from the immediate transmission of an *ordinance in hæc verba*, for confirmation by His Excellency. In the event of military operations, or other proceedings which demand promptitude, a formal and full communication by telegraph may be of great importance. In such cases the expense will be small compared with the benefit.

Upon the whole, I am strongly of opinion that the arrangement is a most favorable one for the Government of Canada, and that the Company will execute their part of it energetically and fairly. I hope, therefore, the agreement may be confirmed without delay.

I have the honor, &c.,

WM. McDougall.

("A.")

NORTH-WESTERN TELEGRAPH COMPANY,

KENOSHA, October 1st, 1869.

Honorable Wm. McDougall, Commissioner of Public Works,
Ottawa.

DEAR SIR,—Through our Mr. Wood, I am informed that you wish our Company to make you a proposition to build a line of telegraph from Fort Garry or Pembina, to connect with our lines in Minnesota. Understanding that you have a large quantity of telegraph material, at or near Fort Garry, we make our proposition in view of that fact.

We will build a good, substantial, one-wire line, connecting Fort Garry with our lines, during the season of 1870. When built we will maintain said line for one year (and thereafter if it shall pay) at our own expense. If we are unable to make the said line pay the expense of operating and maintenance, we reserve the right to abandon the same, or make such disposition of it, as to us may seem best, giving you the option of purchasing the same at cost. We will also agree to give to the Government of Canada, on its official business, a liberal rebate, of at least twenty-five per cent, from regular tariff rates, over all our lines.

On your part you are to secure to us the right of property, and the right to do business over that portion of the line between Pembina and Fort Garry, free and without tax.

2nd. You are to deliver to us, free of cost, at points on the banks of the Red River on the North, between Fort Garry and a point called Breckenbridge, in the State of Minnesota, during the early part of the season of navigation of 1870, five hundred miles of galvanized telegraph wire, with insulators and pins sufficient to put up the same.

If our proposition be accepted we shall need an early answer in order that we may get out cedar poles, which we think can be done on the Mississippi River, and delivered at St. Paul's, thence by rail to the Red River, and there put into rafts and distributed as required. This proposition would have been made at an earlier day, had our Company been in condition to do so. We know nothing of the country, or the supply of material for poles, and to get the information has taken time. And we are now entirely in the dark as to the probabilities of business support, but on this point we have determined to take the risk.

Hoping to receive an early reply,

I am very respectfully,

Your obedient Servant,

Z. G. SIMMONS,

President North-Western Telegraph Company.

(B.)

CHICAGO, October 11th, 1869.

Z. G. Simmons, Esq., President of N. W. Telegraph Co.,

Kenosha, Ill.

DEAR SIR,—Your letter of the 1st instant, making a proposal to build a line of telegraph from Fort Garry on Red River, to a point in Minnesota, which will connect with your present lines, and addressed to me as Minister of Public Works for the Dominion of Canada has been forwarded to me since I left Ottawa.

Having been authorized by the Canadian Government to conclude a provisional agreement with your Company, I have now the honor to submit for your acceptance the following modifications of, and additions to, your proposal.

1st. Your proposition that we should supply you with five hundred miles of wire is inadmissible. But I undertake to supply you with a sufficient length of wire and insulators to make the line from Fort Garry to Breckenbridge on Red River, and deliver

it at three points,—1st. Fort Garry ; 2nd. Pembina ; 3rd. Georgetown, in such quantities respectively as you shall designate.

2nd. The additional wire up to a length of 500 miles, which may be necessary to complete the connection with existing lines will be supplied you upon condition that you purchase the same at cost price, and pay for it in telegraphing for the Government of the Dominion and North-West Territories. One-half of all Bills rendered for such service by your Company, to be payable by way of credit on the above purchase, until the wire so purchased is paid for.

3rd. By "regular tariff rates" I understand rates which at the time are not proportionately higher than those in force on your lines in Minnesota for messages received and sent in the ordinary course from points in that State.

4th. In addition to a rebate or reduction of twenty-five per cent. on Government or official messages, of say less than fifty words, you will be expected to allow a rebate of seventy-five per cent. on official reports and documents exceeding fifty words, which may be telegraphed at night like newspaper reports or despatches.

5th. It is understood that this rebate in both cases is to apply to all connecting lines between yours and the points in Canada to and from which messages may be sent, and that your Company is to make the necessary arrangement for the purpose.

With these modifications I accept your proposal, and will immediately report the agreement to the Government of the Dominion for its confirmation.

I have, &c.,
WM. McDUGALL,
 Lieutenant-Governor North-West Territories.

"BB." [Memo.]

It is understood that if the American Government exacts Customs duty upon the wire extending from the boundary of 49 to Breckenbridge (to be supplied under the agreement) the amount of such duty will be credited on the purchase of wire for the line south of Breckenbridge, but the duty (if any) on the last mentioned wire will be payable by the Company.

WM. McDUGALL

(C.)

ST. PAUL, MINNESOTA, October 13th, 1869.

Z. G. Simmons, President N.-W. T. Co.

MY DEAR SIR,—I enclose a copy of the letter I read to you at Chicago, which I have made the original, and have endorsed upon it a *memo* about duty. I hope we shall not have any to pay, but if the authorities at Washington insist upon it, I propose to credit it to you on the purchased wire. This will probably meet your views.

As a considerable time will elapse before the line is in operation, and as I may wish to send official telegrams forward from St. Cloud, I should be glad if you would allow a rebate upon all such of 25 per cent., as far as Sarnia or Detroit. This would induce business and I think promote your interests. We have an arrangement of this kind with the Montreal Company, and it is therefore unnecessary to stipulate with them, but merely to notify them of the agreement with you, if you assent to it.

Please let me hear from you at Fort Garry by return of post. I will speak to your operator or agent at St. Cloud, and arrange with him conditional on your assent.

I have enquired of one of my agents from Fort Garry, whom I met here, as to the probability of finding timber for poles near Red River. He says there is abundance of tamarack, but fears the cedar is too large. I will write from Fort Garry on this point.

Hoping to hear that you have given orders for getting out the poles at this end of the line,

I am, &c.,

WM. McDUGALL.

(E.)

NORTH-WESTERN TELEGRAPH COMPANY,
KENOSHA, October 27th, 1869.

Hon. Wm. McDougall, Governor North-West Territories.

DEAR SIR,—Your communication under date of October 11th, reached me on the 15th instant, and was immediately replied to by a telegram to St. Cloud, Minnesota, as follows, viz :—

(F.)

"HON. WM. McDOUGALL, St. Cloud, Minnesota.

"Letter received. Wire to Breckenridge must be delivered free of charge at points named. The balance, if we purchase, to be at cost, duty added. Your modification of our rebate proposition is accepted as to our Company, and we will make it apply to all connecting lines, if possible. The twenty-five per cent. rebate may commence at once.

"Z. G. SIMMONS,
"President North-West Telegraph Company."

Not knowing positively that the telegram was received by you, I have sent you a copy of it has above. I have assumed that it would be satisfactory, and immediately ordered the purchase of poles, and have now to report the contracting of all that may be necessary to complete the line to Pembina. For the balance of the distance we will depend on getting the timber nearer. I trust we shall reach you at Fort Garry by telegraph in the fall of 1870, and, if the Railroad should be completed as early as contemplated, it will be early in the fall.

On all communications you wish to transmit over our wires we will rebate twenty-five per cent., commencing from the first of this month.

I am, very respectfully, &c.,

Z. G. SIMMONS,
President North-West Telegraph Company.

(1036.)

LAROSE'S FARM, PEMBINA, NOV. 13th, 1869.

*The Honorable the Secretary of State for the Provinces,
Ottawa, Canada.*

Received by
Secretary of
State for the
Provinces, 4th
Dec. 1869.

SIR,—I have the honor to state for the information, of His Excellency, that I am still without any further communication from the Hudson's Bay Company Authorities at Fort Garry. I have received through private channels notice that my letters of the 2nd and 4th inst., to Governor McLavish were placed in his hands on Monday morning last, and that a meeting of Council was called for that day. But though a week (nearly) has elapsed and private persons have found means to send letters to me and to the other members of my party, written at Fort Garry as late as Thursday (the 11th) the Government have either had nothing to communicate, or found themselves unequal to the task of reaching me. I learn also that they have issued no Proclamation or warning to the rebels, and those who believing the stories now current that the Hudson's Bay Company is opposed to the Government of Canada, may be inclined to join their ranks. I cannot account for this extraordinary reticence and hasty surrender of authority by the legal rulers of the country upon any theory but that of the weakness and imbecility of the Governor, and the complicity of some members of his council with the insurrection. I have evidence that one of his councillors, at whose house some of the first meetings of the malecontents were held, is in

correspondence with the American plotters at Pembina, and trying to find out through *them* what my intentions and movements are. This treason within the Council will also account for the stopping of supplies which were ordered by the Hudson Bay Company's agent here, for our use as well as his own, and which the rebels could have known nothing about unless some of the Hudson's Bay Company's employes had disclosed their destination. The rebels had not previously interfered with the Company's carts or trade operations.

I enclose a printed paper ("A") issued by the rebels at Fort Garry on the 6th instant. It was printed at the office of the "Nor' Wester" by the rebels, who seized the office for the purpose, the proprietor and his employes refusing to have anything to do with it. The type was set by a Yankee in their ranks, and the proof corrected, as I am informed, by Mr. Ross, late of the "Globe" office, Toronto. This "call" was enclosed in a letter under cover to the Post Master at Pembina, which he delivered after some hesitation, and stating that he would not in future deliver letters to me which might come addressed under cover to him. The Post Office here is very loosely conducted, and is entirely at the service of the Insurgents and their sympathizers. Many letters appear to have been opened, and the general opinion is that this *accident* occurs at Pembina. It might not be amiss if Mr. Thornton requested the U.S. Post Master General to instruct his subordinate here to show more care and courtesy in the conduct of his office than he has hitherto done.

My information from the settlement, verbal and written, leads me to believe that this "call" of the French half-breeds will not be responded to by the English-speaking part of the population, except a few traitors who have been in the plot from the beginning and who may take this opportunity to declare themselves.

SUNDAY 14th.

The letter ("B"), which reached me to-day, is without signature, but from the handwriting, I know it to be from Mr. Snow, superintendent of the Government Road. It merely confirms information which has reached me by various means for the last two or three days. The recommendation that I should issue a Proclamation at once, is not made for the first time, but I have uniformly replied that until the transfer of the Territory has taken place, and I am notified of the fact I shall not assume any of the responsibilities of Government. Messrs. Richards and Provencher concur with me in this policy.

Papers ("C") and ("D") are extracts from letters received during the week. The one marked ("C") is from Mr. Mair, who was at St. Paul when the outbreak occurred, but was allowed to pass the barricade, after some delay, on his return to Fort Garry; and extract ("D") is from a letter written by a young Englishman who was on his way to Fort Garry to see the country with a view to settlement—he travelled a part of the way with Mr. Begg, and was allowed to pass the barricade in charge of one of the Hudson Bay Company's wagons.

I enclose also a communication ("E") just received from the "Friends of Canada," through the same channel as the one marked ("H") in my report of the 5th instant. It apprises me, as will be seen, of a state of things in the rebel ranks, which, if true, gives hope of a more easy solution than a few days ago seemed possible.

I directed Colonel Dennis to answer this letter by the same messenger, to the effect that I was still here, and intended to remain—advising that any action by the loyal inhabitants should be taken with deliberation and as much unanimity as possible, and promising that they should hear from me officially very shortly. They were asked to report promptly the result of the "Call" on the 16th instant. A notice posted at the foot of one of the printed "Calls," fixing a place of meeting in the parish of Kildonan is in the handwriting of one of Governor McTavish's councillors. This paper is now in my possession.

The last mail from Canada brought me no official letters. I expected to hear, by this time, that the "transfer" had been agreed to, and the Imperial Order in Council passed. If I do not receive notice of this "Order" in a few days, I shall be much embarrassed in my plans, and the leaders of the insurrection will be emboldened and strengthened.

They understand perfectly that I have no legal authority to act, or to command obedience, till the Queen's Proclamation is issued.

The weather is still mild for this latitude: The earth is not frozen on the prairie to a greater depth than 4 inches. The snow barely covers the ground, and yesterday it rained for two or three hours.

I have, &c.,

WM. McDOUGALL.

("A.")

"PUBLIC NOTICE TO THE INHABITANTS OF RUPERT'S LAND.

"The President and Representatives of the French-speaking population of Rupert's Land in Council (the invaders of our rights being now expelled), already aware of your sympathy, do extend the hand of friendship to you our friendly inhabitants, and in doing so, invite you to send twelve representatives from the following places, viz:—

"St. John's, 1; St. Margaret's, 1; Headingly, 1; St. James, 1; St. Mary's, 1; Kildonan, 1; St. Paul's, 1; St. Andrew's, 1; St. Clement's, 1; St. Peter's, 1; town of Winnipeg, 2;—in order to form one body with the above Council, consisting of twelve members, to consider the present political state of this country, and to adopt such measures as may be deemed best for the future welfare of the same.

"A meeting of the above Council will be held in the Court House at Fort Garry, on Tuesday, the 16th day of November, at which the invited representatives will attend.

"Winnipeg, November 6th, 1869.

"By order of the President,

"LOUIS RIEL, Secretary."

("B.")

FORT GARRY, November 9th.

"Council in deliberation to-day on yours. Received all right. Decision not known. Saddle will fall on right horse. "Call" made on the different parishes by manifesto of Riel, who seized "Nor' Wester" Office, and by force used the press. English and Scotch parishes will not respond.

"Issue Proclamation, and then you may come fearlessly down. Hudson's Bay Company evidently shaking.

"By no means leave Pembina."

("C.")

"WINNIPEG, November 8th, 1869.

* * * "The company, beyond all question, are deeply concerned in the matter. Half-breeds themselves declare that they have received assistance. Insurgents in quasi possession of Fort Garry, receive their supplies there. Yours received all right. Council in deliberation to-day. On no account leave. The English have not risen, because they have not been called upon by the authorities, otherwise they would have risen. Issue your Proclamation and it will be responded to by 500 men.

"Mr. Snow was told by Mr. Riel, to-day, that the road would be stopped. Last night they took possession of "Nor' Wester" office, and printed off a "Call," of which a copy is enclosed. The types were set up by a Yankee, whom they brought with them, and the proof was revised by Mr. Ross. All the Yankees here are openly concerned in it, including certain merchants. Will write at length to-day.

“ MONDAY EVENING,

“ There is a rumour that Fenian aid has been invoked, through the agency of Donaldson probably. The company are at a *non plus* regarding your determination to remain at Pembina. A meeting of Council held this afternoon, which the Archdeacon informed us this evening, resulted, he understood, in nothing.

“ The Pointe au Chêne half-breeds are opposed to the stoppage of the road, which is a great benefit to them, but have made their boast that they will only allow it to be built, so long as matters go on to suit them. Mr. Snow thinks it would have a good effect, to stop the works for a time, to bring want as a pressure upon them. They are all off the works, you may say, and it would be folly to hire one half of them to feed the other half.

“ If the company shut down upon the insurgents, which they can do at any moment, they cannot subsist for any length of time upon their own means. I think with many others that your best course is to remain at Pembina until further developments.”

(“D.”)

FORT GARRY, November 11th.

MY DEAR BEGG,—I write you these few lines, hearing that you are still on the borders of this pleasant land. I got in all right, thanks to * * and am rather pleased with the place. The Government now established is a Republic, with, of course, French half-breeds for its officers. The English half-breeds are perfectly loyal, and will continue so if there is any chance of the Government coming in. I believe that as soon as the Proclamation is received, that they will rise and “lick” the French. Of course we shall all “go in,” that is the Canadians and English now in the settlement. The French have the Fort guarded by 140 men, and have taken possession of the artillery and other arms stored there. They are making the Hudson Bay Company *find* them without pay, which serves them right, as when they had cash they did not mind letting them into the fort, which, with the help of the loyal, they might easily have held; but it is evident that between you and me that they at first were well pleased at the way things were working; and even since I was here, when the half-breeds heard that Mr. McDougall left for Ottawa, they gave up the Fort, but returned next day and got it again. My firm opinion is, that the affair will not be settled until forces are brought from Canada. No blood has yet been shed, but it is impossible to say the day that it may be. All property is respected at present but the Hudson's Bay Company's, which is used *pro bono publico*. Of course we are all doing nothing. Send me a line of what you are doing, and what is being done to bring this miserable affair to a conclusion.

Believe me, &c.

(“E.”)

TOWN OF WINNIPEG, Friday, 12th November, 1869.

Colonel Dennis,

DEAR SIR,—The communication to “friends of the Canadian Government, Town of Winnipeg,” and to Governor McLavish, under cover to Mr. Grant, arrived this morning, and were at once delivered by Mr. Grant. The mail of Tuesday contained letters for His Excellency, and for yourself, under cover to Charles Cavilier and Colonel Stutzman respectively, but we believe they have been taken out, as the mail bag was brought back to the post office and there examined. In future all mail matter is to be examined both ways. River Sale is now guarded by half a dozen, Fort Garry being head quarter, and particular pains are taken to see that no communication reaches the Governor, who is still said (?) to be very sick. Reports of yesterday speak of a split between Riel and Bruce, and a determination on the part of the former to oust the latter. Apart from the mission influence, Bruce has the largest personal following, and the result will of course be good.

Indications show things to be shaky in their camp, more especially since they have heard that the English half-breeds have taken all the ammunition from the magazines at Lower Fort and secreted it. This information led to a demand, day before yesterday, from Riel for the keys of the bastions at Fort Garry, where the guns are, and they have since been guarded at night. The shot and shell, however, belonging to them were at the Lower Fort.

Indians to the number of fifty, had a grand meeting in this neighborhood day before yesterday. "Pegwis," (Prince) presiding—highly indignant with the half-breeds—result, a letter from them to the Governor, entrusted to Mr. Grant, to forward their interests in this matter, being so directly antagonistic to the claims of the half-breeds, that, coupled with the fact that Indians as a rule are on the side of the provisions and pay, there is not the slightest cause to apprehend danger from them, but rather powerful support at any moment, having the sanction of Government and the English half-breed heading.

We will have a strong protest in to the authorities here at once against their inaction and embodying the suggestions made in the letter. We believe that time—a short time—backed by anything official from Governor McDougall, will bring about a solution of the difficulty, and if something comes in the way, foreshadowed in the letter, we will guarantee the result.

In most of the parishes no answer will be made to Riel's Proclamation, or if acted on at all, will be simply to send a letter protesting against their past and present action. They are trying to get an election of B. and McK., from the town, but will, I think, be able to frustrate that if the Americans do not turn out too strong.

This method of communication may be trusted, and is being paid for in full here. Mr. S. is at Oak Point, and stops all contracts to Pointe au Chêne half-breeds. The effect will be to turn their influence against those who have rendered it necessary for the Government to withhold its hitherto liberally spent money.

We want guidance at once; force if necessary is available, but we believe that patience and proper authority will force present Government to action. Town people are beginning to tire of feeding and encouraging their *guard*, and the *guard* in turn resent the falling off of attention. One of the captains told us he was forced into the affair, and wished our good offices to clear him when the time of examination into the affair came.

The cause is quietly and surely advancing with the English element, and gaining ground even with the French; and we feel sure that all will be well.

[No. 1042.]

EXTRACTS of a letter addresssd to the Secretary of State for the Provinces, by a Gentleman resident at St. Paul, Minnesota, dated November 26th, 1869.

I sent your letter by mail to Mr. McDougall, under cover to a trusty friend at Pembina, with instructions to deliver it in person to that weather-bound gentleman.

I am in frequent receipt of letters by mail or private hands, three or four times a week from Pembina. Mails to that point are safe. Beyond it all mails both ways are ransacked and the contents examined, and nothing is allowed to pass without the counter-sign of some insurgent inspector. The events occurring at Red River naturally excite a good deal of interest here, and though there is of course a general desire that the affair may result in the annexation of the country to the United States, the main anxiety here is that bloodshed may be averted, or anything like war, for our people are very apprehensive that such a conflict would draw the Indians of both sides into it, and involve our own border in the horrors of an Indian war. I have not of course the slightest idea what your Government are going to do about it, but to us here it seems the height of imprudence to attempt coercion.

From what I can learn there is at present very little, if any, annexation sentiment in the country, but coercion would be likely to force that alternative. There is a little dash of the Fenian in the leadership. A young Irish priest, named O'Donohue, attached to Bishop Taché's establishment, being said to supply the brains of the movement.

DEPARTMENT OF SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES.

Ottawa, December 7th, 1869.

To the Honorable Wm. McDougall, C.B.

SIR,—I had the honor to address to you Despatches on the 19th and 29th November, which, in view of the insecurity of the mails, were enclosed to a friend at St. Paul, to be sent forward, if possible, by private hand. For fear that they may have miscarried, duplicates are annexed to this.

Your Despatch of the 13th ult., with its enclosures, from ("A") to ("E,") reached me on the 3rd inst., and was immediately laid before the Council. Copies will be sent to the Colonial Secretary this week.

I have now the honor to inform you that the Very Rev. Mr. Thibault, accompanied by Charles de Salaberry, Esq., proceeds to-morrow, *via* St. Paul and Pembina to Fort Garry, for the purpose of assisting in putting down the unlawful assemblage of people on the Red River, and obtaining access for the Canadian Authorities into the North-West.

Mr. Thibault has had great experience in that country, having been for 37 years a priest there, and having only left it last year.

Mr. de Salaberry has also had considerable experience in dealing with the French half-breeds.

After consulting with you, they will take such action with these people as they think most calculated to carry out our objects, and it may, perhaps, be politic that they should have as little open communication with you as possible.

It is, of course, advisable not to arouse the suspicions of the Insurgents, who would be very likely to view with disfavor any persons coming directly as agents from you, and acting under your instructions; you will, however, be good enough to strengthen their hands as much as possible.

With them we send you a Proclamation issued by the Governor General by the direct command of Her Majesty. This should be widely disseminated, in such a manner and at such a time as you think most expedient. It has also been thought well to print copies of your Letter of Instructions, which will, of itself, show how unfounded is the charge that the North-West is to be governed without the interposition or aid of the residents, but by Canadians solely.

Messrs. Thibault and de Salaberry will be followed by Donald A. Smith, Esq., the Hudson's Bay Agent at Montreal, who now occupies the position formerly held by Mr. Hopkins. In his capacity as an officer of the Hudson's Bay Company, he will obtain ready access to the country and to Governor McTavish; and it is hoped that he will be able to strengthen that gentleman in his attempts to restore law and order at Fort Garry.

In order to give his representations due weight and importance, Mr. Smith has been asked to act as a Commissioner holding confidential relations with the Canadian Government. In that capacity, having once reached Fort Garry, he will be able to speak authoritatively as to the beneficent intentions of the Government.

We hope that calmer counsels will soon prevail, and that these misguided people will disperse. So soon as they do so, you will, I presume, proceed to Fort Garry and carry out your instructions.

It will be well for you to arrange for sending messages to St. Cloud, so that we may know by telegraph that order has been restored. On receiving this intimation, His Excellency will communicate the fact, by cable message, to the Colonial Office, and the Proclamation will be at once issued. It has been hitherto delayed, so that the authority

of the Hudson's Bay Company might continue unimpaired, until it was replaced by the Canadian Government, as represented by you.

I have the honor also to send you an Order in Council, passed this day, on the subject of Customs duties.

You will now be in a position, in your communications with the residents of the North-West, to assure them:—

1. That all their civil and religious liberties and privileges will be sacredly respected.
2. That all their properties, rights, and equities of every kind, as enjoyed under the Government of the Hudson's Bay Company, will be continued them.

3. That in granting titles to land, now occupied by the settlers, the most liberal policy will be pursued.

4. That the present tariff of Customs duties will be continued for two years, from the 1st January next, except in the case of spirituous liquors, as specified in the Order in Council above alluded to.

5. That in forming your Council, the Governor General will see that not only the Hudson's Bay Company, but the other classes of the residents, are fully and fairly represented.

6. That your Council will have the power of establishing municipal self-government at once and in such manner as they think most beneficial to the Country.

7. That the Country will be governed, as in the past, by British law, and according to the spirit of British justice.

8. That the present Government is to be considered as merely provisional and temporary, and that the Government of Canada will be prepared to submit a measure to Parliament, granting a liberal constitution so soon as you, as Governor, and your Council have had an opportunity of reporting fully on the wants and requirements of the Territory.

You had, of course, instructions on all the above-mentioned points, excepting as regards the tariff, before you left Ottawa, but it has been thought well that I should repeat them to you in this authoritative form.

Trusting that ere long you may be in a position to carry these liberal propositions practically into the administration of the affairs of the North-West,

I have, &c.,

JOSEPH HOWE.

DEPARTMENT OF SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES.

OTTAWA, Dec. 8th, 1869.

To the Honorable Wm. McDougall, C.B.

SIR,—Enclosed you will find the original Proclamation referred to in my letter of yesterday's date, in English and French.

It may be as well that you should have the original Proclamation in your hands.

I have, &c.,

JOSEPH HOWE.

PROCLAMATION.



V

R.

By His Excellency the Right Honorable Sir JOHN YOUNG, Baronet, a Member of Her Majesty's Most Honorable Privy Council, Knight Grand Cross of the Most Honorable Order of the Bath, Knight Grand Cross of the Most Distinguished Order of St. Michael and St. George, Governor General of Canada.

To all and every the Loyal Subjects of Her Majesty the Queen, and to all to whom these Presents shall come,

GREETING :

THE QUEEN has charged me, as Her representative, to inform you that certain misguided persons in Her Settlements on the Red River, have banded themselves together to oppose by force the entry into Her North-Western Territories of the officer selected to administer, in Her Name, the Government, when the Territories are united to the Dominion of Canada, under the authority of the late Act of the Parliament of the United Kingdom; and that those parties have also forcibly, and with violence, prevented others of Her loyal subjects from ingress into the country.

Her Majesty feels assured that she may rely upon the loyalty of her subjects in the North-West, and believes those men, who have thus illegally joined together, have done so from some misrepresentation.

The Queen is convinced that in sanctioning the Union of the North-West Territories with Canada, she is promoting the best interest of the residents, and at the same time strengthening and consolidating her North American possessions as part of the British Empire. You may judge then of the sorrow and displeasure with which the Queen views the unreasonable and lawless proceedings which have occurred.

Her Majesty commands me to state to you, that she will always be ready through me as her representative, to redress all well founded grievances, and that she has instructed me to hear and consider any complaints that may be made, or desires that may be expressed to me as Governor General. At the same time she has charged me to exercise all the powers and authority with which she has entrusted me in the support of order, and the suppression of unlawful disturbances.

By Her Majesty's authority I do therefore assure you, that on the union with Canada all your civil and religious rights and privileges will be respected, your properties secured to you, and that your Country will be governed, as in the past, under British laws, and in the spirit of British justice.

I do, further, under her authority, entreat and command those of you who are still assembled and banded together in defiance of law, peaceably to disperse and return to your homes, under the penalties of the law in case of disobedience.

And I do lastly inform you, that in case of your immediate and peaceable obedience and dispersion, I shall order that no legal proceeding be taken against any parties implicated in these unfortunate breaches of the law.

Given under my Hand and Seal at Arms at Ottawa, this Sixth day of December, in the year of our Lord, One Thousand Eight Hundred and Sixty-nine, and in the Thirty-third year of Her Majesty's Reign.

[SEAL.]

By Command.

JOHN YOUNG.

H. L. Langevin,
Secretary of State.

Copy of the Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency, the Governor General in Council on the 7th December, 1869.

The Honorable the Secretary of State for the Provinces, &c.

On a memorandum dated 3rd December, 1869, from the Honorable the Minister of Finance, submitting that it is expedient to come to an immediate decision as to the final policy to be adopted on Rupert's Land, in the event of that Territory being added to the Dominion of Canada.

That it would, in his opinion, be inexpedient to make any material changes in the Customs duties in Rupert's Land, until the means of access to the Territory shall have been greatly improved.

He therefore suggests that the present tariff should remain in force for at least two years from the 1st January next.

That it may, however, be necessary to establish duties on spirits, and possibly some other articles which are at present exempt.

That, if the above suggestion be concurred in, he would further recommend that an announcement of the intention of the Government be made to the people resident in the Territory, who may possibly feel some alarm on the subject of increased duties.

The Committee concur in the report of the Finance Minister, and submit the same for your Excellency's approval.

Certified.

WM. H. LEE,

Clerk P.C.

OFFICE OF THE SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES,

December 4th, 1869.

*The Very Rev. Grand Vicar, Mr. Thibault,
Ottawa.*

SIR,—Referring to the conversation held with a Committee of the Privy Council yesterday, and to your kind consent to undertake the delicate task of representing, in conjunction with Colonel de Salaberry, the views and policy of this Government to the people of the Hudson's Bay Territory, I am commanded by His Excellency the Governor General to convey to you, in the form of instructions for your guidance, the grounds of hope entertained here that your mission of peace and conciliation will be entirely successful.

You will not fail to direct the attention of the mixed society inhabiting the cultivated borders of the Red River and Assiniboine to the fact, which comes within your daily knowledge and observation and is patent to all the world, that in the four Provinces of this Dominion, men of all origins, creeds and complexions, stand upon one broad footing of perfect equality in the eye of the Government and the law, and that no administration could confront the enlightened public sentiment of this country which attempted to act in the North-West upon principles more restricted and less liberal than those which are firmly established here.

So far as you may have intercourse with the Indian chiefs and people, you will be good enough to remind them that while bloody and costly Indian wars have raged, often for long periods, in different sections of the United States, there has been no war with the Indians in any of the Provinces of British America since the conquest. For more than a century the Micmacs of Nova Scotia have lived in peace, while the rights of the Milicetes of New Brunswick have been respected. Everywhere within the Canadas, the progress of settlement, while it furnished new employments to the Indians, was rendered practicable by treaties and arrangements mutually satisfactory, that have formed the secure basis of the sympathy and co-operation which have distinguished the Canadians and Indians, not only since the Treaty of Paris, but from the earliest exploration of the country.

It may fairly be assumed that the just and judicious treatment of the Indian Tribes forms the brightest page in the history of British America. Canadians cannot afford to sully it by any ungenerous treatment of the Indians in the North-West.

That the disturbances which have taken place, at and around Winnipeg and Fort Garry, have grown out of vague apprehensions of danger, incident to the transition state of things which the action of the Imperial Government and Parliament rendered

inevitable, there is no reason to doubt ; but it is quite apparent that, underlying what is natural and pardonable in this movement, there have been agencies at work which loyal subjects cannot countenance, and that artful attempts have been made to mislead the people by the most flagrant and absurd misrepresentations. Had the Queen's Government, or the Government of the Dominion, imitated the rash and reckless conduct of some of those who have taken part in this disturbance, there would, ere this, have been bloodshed and civil war in Rupert's Land, with the prospect of the flame spreading along the frontier, as the fire spreads over the prairie. Fortunately, calmer councils have prevailed both in England and at Ottawa. The Proclamation of the Queen's Representative, with copies of which you will be furnished in French and English, will convey to her people the solemn words of their Sovereign, who, possessed of ample power to enforce her authority, yet confides in their loyalty and affectionate attachment to her throne.

The instructions issued to Mr. McDougall on the twenty-eighth of September, long before there was any reason to apprehend serious opposition on the Red River, will show how utterly groundless were the suspicions and apprehensions of unfair treatment which have been widely circulated in the North-West, and to which, unfortunately, some of the Canadian newspapers, for party purposes, at times gave the mischievous color of their authority.

You will perceive that at no time was the absurd idea entertained of ignoring the municipal and political rights of the people of the North-West. That the only two persons that Mr. McDougall was formally instructed to call to his aid were Governor McTavish and Judge Black, who were known to be universally respected, and that any subsequent selections were to be first reported here, with the grounds of his belief that they stood equally high in the confidence and affections of the people.

All the Provinces of the British Empire which now enjoy Representative Institutions and Responsible Government have passed through a probationary period, till the growth of population, and some political training, prepared them for self-government.

In the United States, the Territories are ruled from Washington till the time arrives when they can prove their fitness to be included in the family of States, and, in the Halls of Congress, challenge the full measure of power and free development which American Citizenship includes.

It is fair to assume that some such training as human society requires in all free countries may be useful, if not indispensable, at Red River; but of this you may be assured, that the Governor General and his Council will gladly welcome the period when the Queen can confer, with their entire approbation, the largest measure of self-government on her subjects in that region, compatible with the preservation of British interests on this Continent, and the integrity of the Empire.

I think it unnecessary to make more than a passing reference to the acts of folly and indiscretion, attributed to persons who have assumed to represent the Dominion, and to speak in its name, but who have acted on their own responsibility, and without the knowledge or the sanction of this Government.

In undertaking, at this inclement season of the year, so long a journey in the public service, you display, venerable sir, a spirit of patriotism, which I am commanded to assure you is fully appreciated by the Queen's Representative and by the Privy Council.

I have the honor to be,

Your most obedient Servant,

JOSEPH HOWE,

Secretary of State.

HUDSON'S BAY COMPANY OFFICE,

MONTREAL, 24th November, 1869.

The Honorable the Secretary of State for Canada,
Ottawa.

SIR,—I have to-day received from the Hudson's Bay House, London, an extract of a

letter from Governor McTavish, dated Fort Garry, 12th October, and have now the honor of transmitting it to you. In doing so, I am directed by the Governor and Committee to state that the Company are anxious to afford all the assistance in their power in inducing the Red River people to allow the surveys to be proceeded with, and to use their influence in any other manner with the view of assisting the authorities at Red River to make their arrangements for the government of the Country.

And, in view of the more serious aspect which affairs at Red River have recently assumed, I beg further, on behalf of the Company, to offer the assurance that their Governor, Factors, and Officers generally will use their influence and best efforts to restore and maintain order throughout the Territory.

I have, &c.,

DONALD A. SMITH.

EXTRACT of a letter from Governor McTavish to W. G. Smith, Esq., Secretary, dated Fort Garry, Red River, 12th October, 1869.

I am sorry to say that Mr. Snow, the Superintendent on the Canadian road to the Lake of the Woods, has had a serious disturbance with the people employed on the road, the most of whom are, however, strangers in the Settlement. The men complain bitterly of their treatment, but are, no doubt, in the wrong, as they used considerable violence in dragging Mr. Snow to a creek, into which they threatened to throw him if he did not pay them some few days' wages which they claimed, but which Mr. Snow considered not to be due them. The sum in question he eventually paid them under protest. Mr. Snow laid a charge of robbery against the men, but the magistrates did not consider that the facts justified such a charge, and committed the men for trial at the November Quarterly Court for assault.

I am also sorry to inform you that some of the people here have stopped one of Colonel Dennis's surveying parties and as usual, of course, the Colonel came to us for redress. The men, who have thus interfered, say they know the survey could proceed without any injury to anyone: but stopping it is always a beginning, and they are desirous to let the Canadian Government know that it is not wanted by them; that they consider if the Canadians wish to come here, the terms on which they were to enter should have been arranged with the local Government here, as it is acknowledged by the people in the country. Dr. Cowan is at present doing his utmost to persuade the malcontents to withdraw their resistance to the survey as the easiest mode of getting over the difficulty. I regret to say that I have been so ill for some time as to be unable to go about, and am quite unequal to the slightest exertion.

The Honorable Joseph Howe is at present here on a visit, but means to leave again in a few days. The Honorable Mr. McDougall, it is said, will be here sometime during the current month.

OFFICE OF SECRETARY OF STATE FOR CANADA,

OTTAWA, 26th November, 1869.

Donald A. Smith, Esq.,

Agent Hudson's Bay Company, Montreal.

SIR,—I have the honor to acknowledge your letter of the 24th instant and enclosure, and I am directed at the same time to express the acknowledgment of the Dominion Government, for the assurance therein contained, that the Governor, Factors, and Officers generally of the Hudson's Bay Company, will use their influence and best efforts to restore and maintain order throughout the North-West Territory.

I have, &c.,

E. PARENT,

Under Secretary.

OFFICE OF THE SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES.

OTTAWA, December 10th, 1869.

*Donald A. Smith, Esq.,
Montreal.*

SIR,—I have the honor to inform you that His Excellency the Governor General has been pleased to appoint you Special Commissioner, to enquire into and report upon the causes and extent of the armed obstruction offered at the Red River, in the North-West Territories, to the peaceful ingress of the Hon. Wm. McDougall, the gentleman selected to be the Lieutenant Governor of that Country, on its union with Canada.

Also, to enquire into and report upon the causes of the discontent and dissatisfaction at the proposed change that now exists there.

Also, to explain to the inhabitants the principles on which the Government of Canada intends to govern the country, and to remove any misapprehensions that may exist on the subject.

And also to take such steps, in concert with Mr. McDougall and Governor McTavish, as may seem most proper for effecting the peaceable transfer of the country and the government from the Hudson's Bay authorities to the Government of the Dominion. You will consider this communication as your letter of appointment as Government Commissioner.

With this letter you will receive:—

A copy of the letter of instructions given to Mr. McDougall on leaving Ottawa, dated 28th September last;

Copy of a further letter of instructions to Mr. McDougall, dated 7th instant;

Copy of the Proclamation issued by His Excellency the Governor General, addressed to the inhabitants of the North-West Territories by the express desire of Her Majesty.

These will enable you to speak authoritatively on the subject of your mission.

You will proceed with all despatch to Pembina, and arrange with Mr. McDougall as to your future course of action; and then go on to Fort Garry and take such steps as after such consultation may seem most expedient. You will, of course, consult Governor McTavish, and endeavour to arrange one system of concerted action in the pacification of the country, with Mr. McDougall, the Hudson's Bay authorities and yourself.

As the information received by the Government here is necessarily imperfect, and as the circumstances at the Red River are continually changing, it is not considered expedient to hamper you with more specific instructions. You will, therefore, act according to the best of your judgment in concert with Mr. McDougall, and you will keep me fully informed by every mail of the progress of events.

In addition to the more immediate object of your mission, you are requested to report on the best mode of dealing with the Indian Tribes in the country, and generally to make such suggestions as may occur to you as to the requirements of the country for the future.

I have, &c.,

JOSEPH HOWE,
Secretary.

OFFICE OF THE SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES,

10th December, 1869.

*The Honorable W. McDougall, C.B.,
Pembina, United States.*

SIR,—This will be handed to you by Donald A. Smith, Esq., who goes to Pembina, on his way to Fort Garry, at the special request of this Government.

I have the honor to enclose a copy of a letter of instructions which has been addressed to Mr. Smith, and have it in command to desire that you will consult and

co-operate with that gentleman, in order, that if possible, some peaceful solution may be found of the difficulties which obstruct your entrance to the new Territory.

I have, &c.,

JOSEPH HOWE,

Secretary.

O.S.S.P., 25th January, 1870.

Donald A. Smith, Esq., Fort Garry.

SIR,—Referring to my letter of the 10th ultimo, informing you that His Excellency the Governor General had been pleased to appoint you a Special Commissioner for certain purposes connected with the North-West Territories, I have now the honor, in accordance with the verbal communication made to you at Ottawa, to enclose a Commission under the Great Seal, bearing date the 17th ultimo, appointing you a Special Commissioner for the purposes stated in my letter above referred to, and more fully set forth in the Commission itself.

I have, &c.,

JOSEPH HOWE,

Secretary.

CANADA.

VICTORIA, BY THE GRACE OF GOD, &c.

To Donald A. Smith, of the City of Montreal, in the Province of Quebec, and Dominion of Canada, Esquire, and to all others to whom the same may in any wise concern,

GREETING :

WHEREAS, by an Act of the Parliament of Canada, passed in the thirty-second and thirty-third years of Our Reign, intituled, "An Act for the temporary Government of Rupert's Land and the North-West Territory, when united to Canada," it is recited that it is probable that we may be pleased to admit Rupert's Land and the North-West Territory into the Union of the Dominion of Canada, before the then next Session of the Canadian Parliament, and that it is expedient to prepare for the transfer of the said Territories from the Local Authorities to the Government of Canada, at the time appointed by us for the Civil Government of such Territories, until more permanent arrangements can be made by the Government and Legislature of Canada, and it is by the said Act in effect enacted that our Governor may authorize and empower such officer as he may appoint as Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories, and who shall administer the Government as by the said Act contemplated.

And, whereas, in the preparation for the transfer of the said Territories, Our Governor of Canada was pleased to send the Honorable Wm. McDougall, the gentleman selected to be the Lieutenant Governor as aforesaid, on its union with Canada, in advance and in anticipation of the union, and his entry into the said Territories was obstructed and prevented by certain armed parties who have declared their discontent and dissatisfaction at the proposed union, and their intention to resist the same by force.

And, whereas, it is expedient that inquiry should be had into the causes and extent of such obstruction, opposition, and discontent, as aforesaid.

Now know ye, that having confidence in your honesty, fidelity, and integrity, we do, by these presents, nominate, constitute, and appoint you, the said Donald A. Smith, to be our Special Commissioner, to enquire into the causes, nature, and extent of the obstruc-

tion offered at the Red River, in the North-West Territories, to the peaceable ingress of the Honorable William McDougall, and other parties, authorized by our Governor General of Canada to proceed into the same; and also to enquire into the causes and discontent and dissatisfaction alleged to exist in respect to the proposed union of the said North-West Territories with the Dominion of Canada; and further to explain to the inhabitants of the said Country, the principles on which the Government of Canada intends to administer the Government of the Country, according to such instructions as may be given to you by Our Governor in Council in this behalf; and to take steps to remove any misapprehensions which may exist in respect to the mode of Government of the same, and to report to Our Governor General the result of such enquiries; and on the best mode of quieting and removing such discontent and dissatisfaction; and also to report on the most proper and fitting mode for effecting the speedy transfer of the Country and Government from the authority of the Hudson's Bay Company to the Government of Canada, with the general assent of the inhabitants.

And further, to consider and report on the most advisable mode of dealing with the Indian Tribes in the North-West Territories.

To have and to hold the said office of Commissioner, for the purposes aforesaid unto you the said Donald A. Smith, during pleasure.

In testimony whereof, &c.

(Great Seal.)

LAROSE'S FARM, PEMBINA, U. S.
20th Nov., 1869.

*The Honorable Joseph Howe,
Secretary of State, &c.,
Ottawa, Canada.*

Received by
Secretary of
State for the
Provinces, 7th
Dec., 1869.

SIR,—I have the honor to enclose, for the information of His Excellency, the reply of Governor McTavish to my communications of the 2nd and 4th instant, which only reached me last night. (Copy "A.")

Also, copy of correspondence which has passed between certain "Loyalists" in the town of Winnipeg and Col. Dennis, who is still with me, and writes under my direction. (Copy "B.")

Also a printed copy of "a protest" or "appeal" of these Loyalists to Governor McTavish, and of the "Proclamation" which at last he was induced to issue. (Paper "C.")

I have not yet made any reply to the lengthy and somewhat extraordinary communication which the representative of the Hudson's Bay Company at Fort Garry have thought themselves called upon to address to me, nor have I made any arrangement with a view to the "movement" which they have recommended in its concluding paragraph. As the main object of my correspondence with them has been accomplished, to wit, the issue of a *Proclamation* against the insurgents, I shall await, for a few days, the effect of this proceeding before determining upon the course of action which I ought to adopt myself or recommend to others. I am sure His Excellency will acquit me of indifference to the just claims of Canada, and the reputation of its Government, or to the duties of the position I have the honor to hold as its representative, if I abstain, in the presence of the grave events now transpiring from all controversy with Governor McTavish, or any other employee of the Hudson's Bay Company, as to the propriety of the political arrangements with respect to the North-West Territory, which the Imperial Government has authorized and sanctioned, and the Government of Canada undertaken to carry out. With respect to Governor McTavish, I may observe that the report is current that he is still seriously ill, and that Mr. Black is the writer of the communications which have reached me over the signature of the Governor. How far the personal views and private feelings of Mr. Black—who lately informed Col. Dennis that he was about to quit the territory—may

have influenced the policy of the local authorities, and found expression in their official correspondence, may hereafter appear; but I shall not assume that either the policy adopted by these gentlemen, or the opinions entertained by them of the acts of Her Majesty's Government in England as well as in Canada, has received, or is likely to receive the sanction of the Hudson's Bay Company.

Except the supply of a few articles of food and clothing, for which the prices charged are on the average higher than those of the American traders in the neighbourhood, and the two letters from Governor McTavish, of which copies have been forwarded, I have received no assistance, or suggestion, or communication of any kind from the Company's Agents in the Territory since my arrival at this place. I have been obliged to organize an independent private means of communication with the Settlement in order to ascertain the movements of the rebels, as well as of the loyalists, and I may add, of the Government itself. Even the protest or Proclamation issued by the Governor, has not yet been forwarded to me by him, or any of his agents, although for the last five days it has been in the hands of the public at Fort Garry. But for the private channel of communication referred to, of the existence of which the Company's Officers have not been made aware, I would not have been able to forward this document by the present mail.

I have felt it my duty to mention these circumstances, to enable His Excellency to understand the difficulty that meets me in attempting to organize, in connection with the authorities, any resistance to the conspiracy which has already made such head in the Settlement. The confirmed belief of every person I have seen, or whose testimony has reached me (whether in the confidence of the rebels, or friendly to Canada), is, that the Hudson's Bay Company's employees, with scarcely an exception, are either actively or tacitly encouraging the insurrection. It was the prevalence of this belief that determined me to force the authorities into a public declaration of some kind that would dispel this illusion.—if such it should prove to be—or compel them to shew their hand as abettors of the insurrection. The "appeal" of the loyal inhabitants (see paper "O"), who had previously opened correspondence with me, was the last screw applied, and seems to have accomplished the purpose, notwithstanding the "peculiar circumstances," so strongly insisted upon in the enclosed letter, to show that the issue of such a Proclamation "might affect injuriously the future as well as the present Government."

I feel also bound to state, with reference to the "serious occurrence" detailed in the 10th and 11th paragraphs of Governor McTavish's letter, that I have the positive assurance of Major Wallace, who has just returned from Fort Garry, as well as the statements of the "Friends of Canada," that the Company's Officers in charge of Fort Garry, were told of the intention of the Rebels to take the Fort, the day before it occurred, and that the Chief Constable, Mulligan, who is an old soldier, offered to raise a force, partly composed of "pensioners," with which he declared he could hold the Fort against all the Rebels who would be likely to attack it; but he was told by Dr. Cowan, the officer in charge, that his services were not wanted.

The communication from Winnipeg, of the 17th inst., (marked B.), is from a well informed correspondent, who has access to the Council Room of the malcontents, and is in confidential relations with certain members of the Convention opposed to the aims of the French half-breeds. I thought it prudent to strengthen the hands of the loyal portion of the community by enabling them to deny, on the authority of Col. Dennis, known to be with me and in my confidence, the story about my Council, which is still industriously circulated in the Settlement. Canadian newspapers are quoted to prove that *all* the members of the new Government have been chosen from Canada, and Mr. Howe's remarks, while at Fort Garry, are repeated from mouth to mouth, and construed into an approval of their present attitude of "resistance to tyranny," and "defence of their rights." The best way, as it appeared to me, to contradict these false and pernicious reports, was to authorize the statement contained in the "reply" of Col. Dennis. I have thus far avoided direct communication with unofficial persons, but the extraordinary policy adopted by the local authorities, and the difficulty and delay which I have experienced in my attempts to communicate with them, compel me to seek the aid of loyal men wherever I

can find them. It will not surprise the Government to hear that I have had to incur considerable expense that was unforeseen when I left Ottawa, and that private persons will not risk their lives and property in the service of a Government unable to assert its existence, either *de jure* or *de facto*, without immediate and adequate remuneration, and a very unequivocal promise of indemnity. I have, hitherto, exercised great caution on this point; but I can foresee that affairs may soon take such a turn, as to render a bolder and more costly policy indispensable for the protection of life and property, as well as for the establishment and maintenance of authority.

Messrs. Richards and Provencher are still in the neighbourhood, and see me daily. As soon as the result of the meeting of so-called "Representatives" is known, we shall take counsel together and determine upon the course which prudence and duty may then point out.

I have, &c.,

WM. MCDUGALL.

(A.)

FORT GARRY, RED RIVER,

November 9th, 1869.

*The Honorable W. McDougall, C. B.,
Pembina.*

MY DEAR SIR,—Yesterday, about ten A.M., I had the honor to receive your two letters, dated respectively the 2nd and 4th instant; and deeming it advisable that, in answering these important communications, I should be advised by the Council of Assiniboine, I at once called a meeting of that body for to-day, and, with their concurrence, have now to forward you this reply.

In the first of your letters you mention that, in conformity with the suggestion of Col. Dennis, and the opinion of the Council, you have decided upon remaining a few days at Pembina, in hope of the withdrawal of the disaffected parties from their positions; and we cannot but think that, in the circumstances, your decision in that respect must be considered wise. But it has not been without feelings to which we should find it difficult to give adequate expression, that we have heard of your having been disturbed at the Company's Post, while you were there waiting the course of events, and of your having been compelled to retire beyond the International line.

It appears you are under the belief that a Proclamation from this Government, explaining the late Imperial Act regarding the Territory, and warning the people of the consequences of steps tending to impede any action that might be taken under its provisions, would have a salutary effect in checking the present unlawful movement on the part of the French population. It is difficult, if not impossible, to say, with any degree of certainty, how far that measure might have produced such a result; but, if due consideration be given to the peculiar circumstances in which the local authorities here stood, there will perhaps appear to be but little ground for surprise at a measure of that kind not having been adopted.

The Act in question referred to the *prospective* transfer of the Territory; but up to this moment we have no official intimation from England, or the Dominion of Canada, of the fact of the transfer, or of its conditions, or of the date at which they were to take practical effect upon the Government of this Country. In such a state of matters, we think it is evident that any such act on the part of the Red River authorities as that to which you point, would necessarily have been marked by a great degree of vagueness and uncertainty; it was felt that it might affect injuriously the future, as well as the present Government; and we therefore deemed it advisable to await the receipt of official intelligence of the actual transfer of the Country, and of all the details which it concerned us to know.

But having every reason to believe, from semi-official sources of information, that the transfer of the Territory would soon take place, I have not failed to take every proper opportunity of putting the matter before the public in that light; and, although we have not seen the expediency of issuing any such Proclamation as that suggested, yet we have been incessant in our efforts to impress upon the leaders of these disaffected people a just sense of

the illegality and danger of the course upon which they had entered, and to dissuade them from the further prosecution of their unlawful purposes. Measures, it is true, of a positively coercive nature have not been resorted to, for the simple reason that we have had no reliable force to insure their safety and success; and we are strongly impressed with the belief that there is great, if not overwhelming weight in the reasons given in my former letter for the authorities hesitating to adopt the perilous step of deliberately calling upon one portion of so peculiar a community as this to confront the other in an attitude of determined hostility.

With regard to that part of your letter in which you make such express reference to my position as the present legal ruler of the Country, and to my responsibility for the preservation of the public peace, permit me to say it is because I so deeply feel that responsibility, that I have hitherto been restrained from sanctioning a course so likely, I may almost say, so certain, to engender a strife which, for years to come, might prove fatal to the peace and prosperity of the whole country, and make all government impossible. It is unquestionable that the preservation of the public peace is the paramount duty of every Government; but while in ordinary circumstances it might be reasonable enough to cast upon us the exclusive responsibility of preserving the public peace, it may, perhaps, at the same time, admit of doubt whether some degree of responsibility did not also rest upon others in a case of so exceptional a character as this,—a case in which not merely a whole country is transferred, but also, in a certain sense, a whole people, or, where at least the political condition of the people undergoes such a great change; and it may moreover be a question whether, on the part of the Dominion, the preliminary arrangements for introducing that change have proceeded upon such a just and accurate appreciation of the condition of the country, and the peculiar feelings and habits of its people, as, on such an occasion, was desirable, if not absolutely essential; and whether the complication by which we are now surrounded, may not, to a great extent, be owing to that circumstance. But, at a time like this, when it is felt that all our energies ought to be directed to the possible removal of the obstacles that oppose the peaceable inauguration of your Government, it would be out of place here to go into the discussion of such points as relate to the responsibility of those concerned in the introduction of the new order of things; and I shall therefore proceed to deal with matters of a more practical as well as more pressing nature.

What the ultimate object of the malcontents may be, it is difficult to ascertain, but if they are aiming at establishing a Government of their own, as the leaders whom you met on the 2nd inst, rather prematurely said they had already done, I doubt very much whether the rest of the Settlement are at all likely to submit to such a destination; but whether they may think it best tactily to ignore such a usurpation of power, while it consisted merely in a name, or actively resist it, or take part in the movement in the hope of moderating and directing it, will, I apprehend, greatly depend upon circumstances.

It seems by no means improbable that on both sides of the line there may be persons who are looking with a degree of sympathy upon this movement of the French population; their motives, it is not difficult to imagine, but it seems to be nothing more but infatuation for the leaders of these disturbances to encourage the idea of annexation to the States, for it is highly improbable that, whatever might be the influence of such a change upon the community, its effect upon the French population generally, could hardly fail to prove unfavorable to them.

Excepting in one respect—but that I am sorry to say, a serious if not in a formidable sense—little change, so far as we can learn, has, since my last, come over the arrangements or the spirit of these people. The prevention of your entrance into the Settlement was the object they first proposed to themselves, and upon that object they appear to be as fully bent as ever, being still, as I am informed, collected at several points, in numerous armed bands, in readiness, as we may presume, to obstruct your approach to the Settlement, should that be attempted; and they are, of course, aware that so long as you remain in the neighbourhood, such an attempt is always possible.

The occurrence to which I have alluded in the preceding paragraph as being serious, is this, that on the afternoon of Tuesday, the 2nd inst., a number of these daring people, suddenly, and without the least intimation of their intention to make such a move, took possession of the Gates of Fort Garry, where they placed themselves inside and outside the Gates, to the number in all of about one hundred and twenty, and where, night and day, they have constantly kept a pretty strong armed guard. On being asked what they meant by

such a movement upon the Fort, they said their object was to protect it. Protect it from what? they were asked. Their answer was—from danger. Against what danger, they were asked? To this question, they replied that they could not now specify the danger, but that they would do so hereafter, and obstinately took up the positions they have since kept in spite all our protests and remonstrances, at such a bold and high-handed proceeding.

On coming into the Fort, they earnestly disclaimed all intention of injuring either person or property within it, and it must be allowed that in that respect they have kept their word; but it is an inconvenience and a danger next to intolerable, to have a body of armed men, even with professions of peace towards ourselves, forcibly billeted upon an establishment such as this. Their intentions in coming to the Fort they have never definitely expressed, nor have they yet specified the danger from which their presence was meant to protect the place. We are, therefore, left in some measure to conjectures, and by these we are strongly led to believe that you were expected to come to the Fort, and that by thus having previous possession of the gates, they felt that they would be sure of keeping you out.

It is needless to ask why their presence was submitted to, for I presume you already know enough of the circumstances fully to understand that it was only borne as being apparently, with respect to immediate results, the less formidable of two very serious evils.

Towards the end of your last letter, you desire my opinion as to whether any useful purpose is likely to be served by your remaining for any length of time at Pembina, and feeling the importance that may be attached to any expression from me on that point, I have taken care to test my own ideas very closely by the opinions of the Council.

In compliance with your wishes, let me say, as the substance of our opinion on this point, that we perceive there is as little chance as ever of these people receding from opposition to your coming into the Settlement; that the attempt might be productive of the most disastrous consequences, and that while you remain at Pembina, the effect, so far as the Settlement is concerned, is likely to be the perpetuation, and possibly even the aggravation of this state of disturbance and danger. You can, therefore, yourself judge whether any good purpose would be likely to be answered by your remaining at Pembina, and perhaps your own view of the matter will be such as to prepare you for my adding, as I assure, I do with a feeling of inexpressible regret, that to the Council and myself it appears that your early return to Canada is not only essential for the peace of the country, but also advisable in the interest of the establishment in the future of the Canadian Government.

It is no doubt possible that a little more time may change the minds of the men, and public meetings are notified which may somewhat alter the present state of affairs. Your immediate departure ought not therefore, perhaps, to be at once determined upon. It might be advisable, a few days longer, to wait the course of events, or at any rate until I can again communicate with you; but at present, I confess, I see but little reason to expect the occurrence of anything that is likely materially to change the opinion I have expressed with regard to your movements.

I remain, &c.,

W. McTAVISH.

(B.)

WINNIPEG, Wednesday Evening,

11 P.M., 17th Nov., 1869.

Council met at 12 yesterday. English delegates all staunch except the two from the town of Winnipeg. The English parishes considering such a meeting, as proposed by the French, illegal, sent representatives with written instructions, and these were to explain first, that they disapproved of all the acts committed, and, secondly, that they would not join in forming an independent Government. The French delegation consisted of the council of 12 before formed, and their president and secretary. Riel caused a salute of a number of field pieces to be fired, and the meeting took place in the Court House, which was at the time and since, guarded. Yesterday was consumed in the expression of the views of the English delegates, and it was expected that to-day the French were to show their hand. Late in the afternoon of

yesterday, the MSS of Governor McTavish's Proclamation was handed into the assembly, and much discussion as to the propriety of doing so preceded its reading. The English delegation, with the exception of the two from the town, worked well together, and wished to make special use of this document, but its want of general publication and translation into French prevented. An interview with three of the principal English delegates just before this writing, informs us that they, this morning, demanded of the French delegates *their policy*, but they refused to give it. Riel argued that the Hudson's Bay Company's Government was a very weak one, and that a better one was necessary. This was met by the counter argument of the consequent necessity of a strong Government, and shown by reference to the different published papers that the Canadian one was the only one possible. Riel evidently pointed to a Republic, but would not say so directly. Priest O'Donohue at one time became very much excited, and quoted the wrongs of Ireland, and stated that the British Government was now shaking to its foundation, &c. They affect to despise the Proclamation of Governor McTavish, herewith enclosed. We have no faith in the sincerity of that Proclamation, but believe that the pressure brought to bear upon them here by the loyal party, was such that they could no longer resist, and their own conviction of the utter helplessness and impossibility of further resistance, compelled them to issue it as much for their own safety as for the continuance of their authority, if any portion remains. Delegates thanked Governor in writing for the Proclamation. General Court of Assiniboine is to be held to-morrow as usual, and, in consequence, the meeting of delegates and French put off till Monday, when English insist on knowing the French policy. English delegates, except those from town, very determined, and will have meetings of their people in the interim. A report reached here yesterday of 2,000 troops being on the way, and is believed by the French, hence the quietude of to-day in comparison with yesterday. Riel alluded indirectly to it, and said all routes were alike impossible. The three principal delegates we have just conversed with, say "that *they think* that as it is believed that the Governor has it in his power to increase the number of Councillors to 15, and that only six are said yet to be appointed, the concession of the remainder to the people will be what the claims may be whittled down to." Result of Monday's meeting of Council will be duly reported. We think that the insurgents will back down. Probably, a deputation to you will be decided upon at next meeting; any concession made will do good. Can we inspire delegates in regard to what is possible? Reply by bearer.

To which the following reply was sent.

PEMBINA, 19th Nov., 1869.

"The information given in yours of Wednesday is very satisfactory. Monday's proceedings will be looked for with much anxiety. The efforts of the Loyalists to maintain order and the authority of the Crown, in a difficult crisis, will not be forgotten or go unrewarded. The Proclamation of Governor McTavish seems judicious, and ought to impress all but the leaders of the conspiracy, who must know the nature of the crime they have committed, and cannot be expected to listen to his admonitions. Labor to detach the ignorant, and so far, the innocent dupes of these men from their treasonable association. It is thought here that if the majority, now deliberating, decides for a Republic or other illegal form of Government, the loyal inhabitants should withdraw from all association and discussion with the insurgents, and be prepared to rally in support of law and order, and the rights of the British Crown in this part of the Dominion, the moment a call is made by competent authority.

Most of the stories told to deceive and excite the half-breeds and others against the Government which the highest authority in the Empire has ordered to be established, and will support with all its force, are known to be false by many persons now in the Territory, especially by those who are still its legal rulers. One statement that seems to be believed by many, and may have tended to abate the loyal zeal of some otherwise well disposed persons, is, that "*all the members of the New Council* are to be sent from Canada." This may be contradicted at once. The only persons mentioned in the Governor's instructions, to whom he is directed to offer seats in his Council, are residents, and have long been residents within the Territory.

Three gentlemen only, have come from Canada with the expectation of appointment in or under the Government, but the Governor's hands are so far untied, except as above stated, in the matter of his Council.

This is not an official announcement, or for use in any public way, but to enable you to correct the false statements which are current, and to assure the loyal and well disposed.

The Governor remains here for the present.

J. S. D.

THE CRISIS.—LOYALTY TRIUMPHANT.—THE GOVERNOR'S PROCLAMATION.

On the 12th instant the following address was presented to Governor *McTavish*, signed by a large number of our most respectable inhabitants, and, on the 17th, a reply was issued, which will be found below.

TOWN OF WINNIPEG,
November 12th, 1869

To *William McTavish, Esq.*,
Governor Hudson's Bay Company, Fort Garry.

We, the undersigned residents of the Town of Winnipeg, and loyal subjects of Her Majesty the Queen of Great Britain and Ireland,

Beholding, with great alarm, the unsettled state of feeling existing in this Territory, and the threatening position assumed by a portion of its French speaking population towards the Crown, in the person of Her Majesty's representative, the future Governor of this Territory; and, believing, as we do, that this disaffection or dissatisfaction is the result of various slanderous interpretations having been from time to time disseminated among the people by persons unknown:

We do, therefore, now demand that you, as the representative of Her Majesty in this Territory, do proclaim among the people, either by convening a public meeting for that purpose, or posting in conspicuous places throughout the Country, a full and correct exposition of the nature of the transfer of this Territory to the Dominion of Canada.

We also request that you will explain, so far as lies in your power, the policy likely to be adopted by the Canadian authorities relative to the governing of the Territory.

Also, that you deny the numerous libellous slanders which are in circulation regarding the purposes for which the Territory was acquired. That you warn them of the danger they are incurring to themselves by persistence in their present violent course, thereby imperilling the future welfare of the Country; and that you do entreat them to lay down their arms, and return peaceably to their homes.

Here is the Proclamation drawn from Governor *McTavish* on the present state of affairs:—

Whereas, I, *William McTavish*, Governor of Assiniboine, have been informed that a meeting is to be held to-day of persons from the different districts of the Settlement, for the ostensible purpose of taking into consideration the present political condition of the Colony, and for suggesting such measures as may appear to be best adapted for meeting the difficulties and dangers connected with the existing state of public affairs.

And, whereas, I deem it advisable, at this juncture, to place before that meeting, as well as before the whole body of the people, what it appears to be necessary for me to declare in the interest of public order, and of the safety and welfare of the Settlement.

Therefore, I notify all whom it concerns that, during the last few weeks, large bodies of armed men have taken positions on the public high-road to Pembina, and, contrary to the remonstrances and protests of the public authorities, have committed the following unlawful acts:—

First.—They have forcibly obstructed the movements of various persons travelling

on the public highway in peaceable prosecution of their lawful business, and have thus violated that personal liberty which is the undoubted right of all Her Majesty's subjects.

Secondly.—They have unlawfully seized and detained, on the road at La Rivière Sale, in the parish of St. Norbert, goods and merchandize, of various descriptions, and of very considerable value, belonging as well to persons coming into the Colony as to persons already settled here and carrying on their business in the Settlement, thereby causing great loss and inconvenience not only to the owners of these goods, but, as has formally been complained of, also to the carriers of the same, and possibly involving the whole Colony in a ruinous responsibility.

Thirdly.—They have unlawfully interfered with the public mails, both outgoing and incoming, and by that tampering with the established means of communication between the Settlement and the outside world, have shaken public confidence in the security of the mails, and given a shock to the trade and commerce of the Colony, of which the mischievous effects cannot now be fully estimated.

Fourthly.—Not only without permission, but in the face of repeated remonstrances on the part of the Hudson Bay's Company's officer in immediate charge of Fort Garry, they have, in numbers varying from about sixty to one hundred and twenty, billeted themselves on that establishment, under the plea of protecting it from a danger which they alleged was known by themselves to be imminent, but of which they have never yet disclosed the particular nature. They have placed armed guards at the gates of an establishment, which every stick and stone of it is private property; in spite of the most distinct protestations against such a disregard of the rights of property, they have taken possession of rooms within the Fort; and, although they have there as yet committed no direct act of violence to person or property beyond what has been enumerated, yet, by their presence in such numbers, with arms for no legitimate purpose that can be assigned, they have created a state of excitement and alarm within and around the Fort which seriously interferes with the regular business of the establishment.

Fifthly.—A body of armed men have entered the Hudson Bay's Company's Post at Pembina, where certain gentlemen from Canada, with their families, were peaceably living; and, under threats of violence, have compelled them to quit the establishment at a season of the year when the rigors of winter were at hand, and forced them to retire within American Territory.

And, in the last place, they have avowed it as their intention, in all those unlawful proceedings, to resist arrangements for the transfer of the government of this Country, which have been made under the sanction of the Imperial Parliament, and of virtually setting at defiance the royal authority, instead of adopting those lawful and constitutional means which, under the enlightened rule of Her Most Gracious Majesty our Queen, are sufficient for the ultimate attainment of every object that rests upon reason and justice; the persons who have been engaged in committing those unlawful deeds, have resorted to acts which directly tend to involve themselves in consequences of the gravest nature, and to bring upon the Colony and the Country at large, the evils of anarchy and the horrors of war.

Therefore, in the interests of law and order, in behalf of all the securities you have for life and property, and, in a word, for the sake of the present and future welfare of the Settlement and its inhabitants, I again earnestly and emphatically protest against each and all of these unlawful acts.

I charge those engaged in them, before they are irretrievably and hopelessly involved immediately to disperse themselves and peaceably to depart to their habitations, or to their lawful business, under the pains and penalties of law; and whatever in other respects may be the conclusions of those who meet to deliberate upon the present critical and distracted state of public affairs, I adjure you as citizens, having the interests of your country and your kindred at heart, to ratify and proclaim, with all the might of your united voices, this public notice and protest, and so avert from the Country a succession of evils, of which those who see the beginning may never see the end.

You are dealing with a crisis out of which may come incalculable good or

immeasurable evil, and with all the weight of my official authority, and all the influence of my individual position, let me finally charge you to adopt only such means as are lawful and constitutional, rational and safe.

Given under my hand and seal, at Fort Garry, this 16th day of November, 1869.

W. McTAVISH,
Governor of Assiniboine.

OTTAWA, December 7th, 1869.

1611.

*The Hon. W. McDougall, C.B.,
Pembina.*

SIR.—I had the honor to receive this morning, your Despatch of the 20th November, covering enclosures from the Hudson's Bay Company. These papers have been laid before the Privy Council, and will be forwarded, by His Excellency the Governor General, to England.

I have, &c.,

JOSEPH HOWE,

Secretary of State for the Provinces.

OFFICE OF SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES,

OTTAWA, 10th December, 1869.

*The Honorable Wm. McDougall, C.B.,
Pembina.*

SIR.—I am commanded to call your attention to the exposed situation in which the arms, purchased for Government service at the Red River, have been placed. Georgetown, where it is understood here they are stored, could so easily be surrounded and forced by any roving band of half-breeds or Indians, or by persons quite as unscrupulous coming in from the United States, that they can hardly be considered secure.

If matters are to remain for any length of time on their present footing, they would perhaps be safer at St. Cloud or St. Paul.

I have, &c.,

JOSEPH HOWE,

Secretary of State for the Provinces.

OTTAWA, 11th December, 1869.

*The Honorable W. McDougall, C.B.,
Pembina.*

SIR.—I notice in the reports of several persons, made to you and forwarded to this office, references to expressions said to have been used by me in conversations with inhabitants of the Hudson's Bay Territory, and I think it proper that you should be authorized to contradict all such statements, so far as the inference can be drawn from them, that any thing said by me at Winnipeg, or anywhere else, gave countenance or sanction to breaches of the law and order or to resistance to the peaceable establishment of the authority of the Dominion in the Territory, under the sanction of Imperial Legislation.

During my visit to the Red River I never saw Riel, Bruce, Father Ritchot, or any persons said to be the leaders of the insurrectionary movement, but I conversed freely with all classes and orders of people, from Governor McTavish downwards, and to them all held the same language—That the same constitution as the other Provinces possessed would ultimately be conferred upon the country; that in the provisional arrangements to be made, the feeling and interests of the resident population would be considered—that leading men enjoying their confidence, would be at once taken into the Government, and that the young men, without

distinction of blood, would be drawn into the public service as they were fitted by education to fill places of trust and emolument

I have, &c.,

JOSEPH HOWE,

Secretary of State for the Provinces.

PEMBINA, U.S., 25th November, 1869.

Hon. Joseph Howe, Secretary of State
for the Provinces, &c.

Received by the Secretary of State for the Provinces, 11th Dec., 1869.

SIR,—I have the honor to forward a confidential Report by Major J. Wallace of Whitby, Ontario, who was sent from this place on the 4th November, 1869, on a special mission to Fort Garry, and who returned on the 22nd instant. He is the person mentioned in my report of the 5th instant, as being in the confidence of some of the Conspirators here, so far as to obtain a "Pass" from them. Major Wallace was employed by Colonel Dennis in his surveying operations last summer. He is a shrewd Scotchman, has been many years a resident of Canada, and though a little hot-tempered, may be regarded as a trustworthy reporter of what he saw and heard.

I received through an employee of the Hudson's Bay Company, sent by Governor McTavish, information that the rebels had resolved to send an expedition (of horsemen) to Georgetown to burn the Hudson's Bay Storehouse there, in order to destroy the arms and ammunition which I had stored at that place. This was to be done *at once*, if the results of the "Convention" was in favour of the insurrection. As there was no time to lose, I took immediate steps to have them removed to Fort Abercrombie, some 40 miles distant. I wrote to General Hunt (*Copy A*), requesting him to allow them to be stored in the Fort, which I have no doubt he will readily comply with. I caused it to be announced, or rather stated as a fact by our party, in their conversation with the conspirators at Pembina, that the arms, &c., had been removed to Fort Abercrombie. This will be reported at head-quarters, and will probably put a stop to the "raid." But in any event, the arms, &c., will be at Fort Abercrombie before the raiders can overtake them.

I have received a private note from Governor McTavish, informing me of his having issued a Proclamation, more, he observes, in deference to my opinion, than from any expectation of a favourable result, and at the same time he expresses his satisfaction that I have remained here. He enclosed to me letters he had received for me from Sir Curtis Lampson and the Secretary of the Hudson's Bay Company, and expressed his desire to be of service. I infer that he had received instructions from the Company, and notice of the date of transfer. I am still without any official notice of the Imperial Order in Council, and must act, if at all, upon the information contained in the private letters from Sir Curtis Lampson, which announces the date of transfer agreed to by the Imperial Government to be 1st December next.

There is a rumor among the rebel sympathizers here this afternoon, that the French half-breeds have demanded the "Public Money" from the Treasurer at Fort Garry, and that he had refused, and was thereupon made prisoner.—That English and Scotch half-breeds and the Canadians were arming, and that a *row* was expected. The "Convention," the same rumor informs us, has been adjourned for some days. I expected a private message from the settlement, of the result of Monday's and Tuesday's deliberations, in time for this post, but it has not yet reached me.

I have the honor to be, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

WM. McDUGALL.

Notes by J. W. between 4th and 22nd November, 1869.

To the Honorable Wm. McDougall, C.B.,
Pembina.

I left Fort Pembina for Fort Garry on 4th November, 1869, with a despatch for

Governor McTavish. I was furnished with a letter of "safe conduct" from an American gentleman of this place. Arriving at the barricade, River Sale, I was conducted by armed men to the Catholic Church, which I understood to be headquarters of the insurgents. In an upper room I found President Bruce, Secretary Louis Riel, Mr. O'Loan, Mr. McKinney, Jr., and five half-breeds whom I did not know. On presenting my "pass" to Riel, he read it in French to Father Ritchot and said, "It is all right, but although sorry to trouble me, must request me to show any documents I might have in my possession." None were in view. Several questions were then asked and promptly answered as to the position and design of Governor McDougall and his party. I then passed to Fort Garry, where I found means to have the despatch placed in the hands of Governor McTavish. On the strength of it, the Council of Assiniboine was called for Tuesday the 8th. Mr. Bannatyne is a member of that Council, and was present at that meeting. He told me that when Mr. McDougall's letter was read, McTavish (although sick) raged furiously, and asked what McDougall meant—that up to that moment no official information had reached them of any change having been made in the ownership of Rupert's Land, and that he would let Mr. McDougall know that no such dictation as that indicated by the letter would for a moment be tolerated.

Mr. Mulligan, a pensioner, and a police constable in Winnipeg, told me that he had warned the Hudson's Bay Company, on several occasions, that the half-breeds were to rise. This he did through Judge Black and Dr. Cowan, and suggested that the pensioners be called out to guard the fort, but that they declined doing anything in the matter. Mulligan also informed me, that on the 8th inst., after the fort had been in possession of the insurgents for several days, that he heard from one of the rebels whom he could rely upon, that the arsenal was to be broken open and the arms taken possession of in a day or two, and informed Dr. Cowan, who replied, "What can we do?" Mulligan answered, "Call out the pensioners, and others willing to join them, and let them take possession of the fort." The Judge who was present said, "A Council will be called, and an answer given to you at 3 o'clock to-morrow." Next day Mulligan was told that his services were not required, and that evening the arms were taken possession of.

I had several conversations with Mr. McKinney, senr. At first he was somewhat shy—stated that as yet he had nothing to do with the insurgents, but that he might have;—that the United States was the natural outlet for the Settlement, and the people wanted nothing else as he believed; and that they would never submit to the injustice about to be forced upon them by the Canadian Government in appointing a Council from Canada, &c.,—virtually ignoring the people of Red River—that if Governor McDougall had come alone he would have got in and would have been heard, and if his views did not suit they would have told him to go. Again, on another occasion, he corroborated what Bannatyne said about the want of official notice, &c.,—that the people would not submit to taxes—that they wanted control of their own affairs, and that he approved of the course the half-breeds had taken in keeping the Governor out—and that they had about 700 men under arms.—Our other conversations were something similar until I went in on the Saturday morning before I left, and had about an hour with him. He was reading the Imperial Act ceding the North-West Territory. He opened out frankly, and stated that a blank he saw in the Act meant neither more nor less than that after a certain time, Canadians could fill it up as they wished—that he was a delegate of Fort Garry, but that very little would be done by the Convention, unless to draw the two parties closer together—that he would like to see the country at peace, so that trade might go on as usual, but that he had no hopes as long as the Governor and suite remained at Pembina. What the people now wanted, he said, was complete control over their own affairs, and that as soon as the Delegates had closed their work, he believed that orders would be given to have the census of the people taken.—Elections to be held and a Parliament established, that the Canadian Government must respect. Why? he asked, should we be any worse dealt with than British Columbia, Newfoundland, or Prince Edward Island? Mr. Howe, he said, told us plainly that we were entitled to the same rights, and that by perseverance we would get them. He further remarked that, "if we fail in our efforts to arrange with Canada, another

element would be called in, and the men at the head of this movement just know how to get them, and that is the Fenians."

I conversed with Hugh Donaldson, of Fort Garry, who was very violent, and stated with an oath, that a Canadian Governor should never rule the Settlement, and threw out hints what they could do in spring. Mr. O'Loan, Mr. George Evelyn, hotel-keeper, and several others expressed views similar to Mr. McKinney. I talked with many others on that side (I mean the French half-breeds), and they nearly all spoke to the same purport. A great part of the foregoing was drawn out by questions carefully put by myself.

Mr. * * * says, that the English and Scotch half-breeds are with the Canadian Government, but does not think that they would take up arms, until they have an army to fall back upon, and some security from the Government that they would be paid for the destruction of their property by fire or otherwise,—that he has the promise of 300 Sioux Indians at any time they are required, but the people generally do not think well of letting the Indians loose until other means are exhausted.

Mr. Taylor, a wealthy merchant, 12 miles up Assiniboine River, presented me with the *Globe* newspaper, and said that paper condemns what you say. I must confess that paper has done infinite harm to Canadian interests in the Settlement.

Colonel Robinson is in favor of Government (Canadian) but more so, I think in favor of the United States. He is an American.

* * * * whose brother * * * goes fully with Insurgents, is greatly attached to Canadian Government, and has very great influence amongst Indians—would be a most useful man in any treaty with them—He has put * * * from the house he lived in. He said he was a half-breed, and gloried in the name and race, and would never give up the rights he had in the lands. He wanted to see the Governor and hear what he had to say. He was sure the Canadian Government would never take their rights away.

Mr. William Tait was thought to be favorable to Canada, but from what he said in Hudson's Bay Company's Office to myself and Mr. Grant, we were of opinion that he was changing, as a great many are in danger of doing, who visit the Company's Office, and hear the sentiments of John McTavish and Mr. Hargrave. Mr. Tait said, "you may talk, but in that convention we sit opposite to those who have been born and brought up among us, ate with us, slept with us, hunted with us, traded with us, and are of our own flesh and blood—gentlemen, said he, I for one cannot fight them. I will not imbue my hands in their blood."

James Ross, another delegate, charged me with speaking against the Governor. He is believed by most people to be staunch in favor of Canadians. He thinks some arrangement may yet be come to by Convention, by which the Governor can safely be brought in. His views do not coincide with a great majority of Council.

Mr. Lorrman, another delegate, thinks the present Convention will appease the French half-breeds somewhat. We have met them, he says, treated them kindly, and by continuing to do so, may win them over, but it will take time.

Mr. *** thinks no good will come out of the Convention—that nothing but troops, and that immediately, will be of any use, and that if the Canadian Government will send troops by middle of January, the English and Scotch will no doubt organize. If troops are not sent, I, for one, he said, will at any time sign a memorial to the United States Government, asking their permission to annex ourselves to them. Mr. *** is of opinion that the Indians (Chippawa) will act with the Canadians, but that some steps should be taken at once to have a treaty with them. Trade, he says, is gone, and everything unsatisfactory under the present state of things.

Mr. *** a wealthy half-breed, and strongly opposed to the Priests, says, that soldiers should be sent in immediately to save the Country—that the English and Scotch half-breeds cannot stand this reign of terror much longer, but from want of a leader they are very unwilling to take any steps against their opponents the French half-breeds, and that 500 or 1,000 men now would bring the Governor in, and when once into the Settlement,

our people, he says, would rally round him, but until the Proclamation was issued there would be nothing done. He had no faith in the working of Conventions—as long as McKinney, O'Loan, Riel, and the Priests Ritchot and O'Donohue were among them, and so long as Bannatyne gave them encouragement, as he now does. The latter has more influence amongst the French half-breeds than any one, or perhaps any dozen men in Fort Garry.

Dr. Schultz says he does not approve of speaking anything of troops coming in, until all the Canadians have notice, so that they can leave the Settlement. He thinks also that the Convention may result in sending delegates to see the Governor at Pembina; is clearly of opinion that had proper measures been taken by the Hudson's Bay Company on the first sign of the outbreak, of which they had due notice, no insurrectionary movement would have taken place. He says the Chippawa and Sioux Indians are with the Government, willing to assist in suppressing the revolt at any time—that if the people there knew they were to be protected by the Canadian Government, there would be no want of leaders amongst the English and Scotch half-breeds, that he thinks on the first sign of troops coming in, the Canadians will be murdered.

Mr. Snow coincides in every particular with Dr. Schultz—was very active and willing to assist me in carrying out the few little matters I had to attend to at Fort Garry, could not have got on well without him.

* * * says, if Governor would give him authority, he would organize the English and Scotch half-breeds at once—that they could take Fort any day, and keep it too—is not afraid of the report of troops being sent—would rather like to hear of it—is very much afraid of delay, as he is satisfied a number of Fenians are being raised to come into the settlement in the spring—could not give me any reliable authority, but insisted it was a fact.

Mr. * * * wanted to see troops in at once, and the whole thing would be crushed—The French were a noisy, brawling crowd, and would not stand fire—that 1,000 men would be a sufficient number to settle the dispute, and in aftertimes push back hostile Indians, if any should turn up—that too much delay would or might cause a deal of bloodshed, and probably the loss of the whole county.

Mr. Bannatyne is a gentleman with whom, with the exception of Mr. McKinney, I have had more conversation than any other in the settlement. He is clearly in favor of the measures taken by French half-breeds, although he told me one day “that he would rather have paid £50 than have had that rising take place!” On every occasion he had some excuse for the half-breeds, and a word of sympathy at times for Governor McDougall and his family, but that the sooner he left Pembina the better it would be for himself and the settlement, and he hoped I would advise Colonel Dennis to leave, which I promised to do, I insisted on him going down with me to see the Governor, and take Riel, or McKinney, or O'Loan with him, but he would not consent. By-the-bye, McKinney told me that no delegates would be sent from the Convention to the Governor, for a particular reason that he was not at liberty to tell me at present. I could give many other conversations with other parties, but they were all of the same substance, and now, as you desire, I will give you my opinion of the whole as concisely as possible.

The movement from the first has been of a Republican-Fenian kind. I am fully convinced that no offer that could be made by the Canadian Government would be accepted by the French half-breeds and their friends the Americans, and that unless they are forced into it by this Convention and the threatenings of the English half-breeds and whites, or perhaps troops, they will not accept a Governor from the Dominion on any terms.

Further, I believe the English and Scotch will take no steps to bring the Governor into the settlement, but that if once there they will protect him. This has been expressed to me by many of them. I endeavored on every occasion to impress on parties, where I could do so with safety, that the present Government or Council was only a provisional one—that as soon as a franchise was decided upon a responsible Government would be formed as understood in Canada, that I understood the Governor had it in his power to appoint 5 of

the Council at Red River. Bannatyne and others enquired, "how this was not known before?" The former said, "I would give anything rather than this fine country should fall into the hands of Americans."

I further think, from conversing with the friends and foes of the Hudson's Bay Company, that they could, in the most easy manner, have stopped the whole affair by issuing their Proclamation—calling upon all to obey the laws; that any rising of the kind spoken of would be visited by the severest penalty the law could inflict, and that the whole available civil force would be called out to sustain law and order. They did not do this, nor issue any Proclamation, until in a manner forced into it by the memorial of the inhabitants of Fort Garry who were loyal. On this Company's head lies a full measure of blame.

The Indians, from what I can learn from * * * * and others, are with the Canadian Government, but there is no trusting them without a treaty. At present I think some of them are endeavoring to get subsidies from both parties. "Chief, Henry Prince," I know, has been taking from both.

In conclusion, I would say, if this Convention does not do something towards a settlement in a few days, the cheapest and safest course, and the one likely to prevent the destruction of life and property, is for the Canadian Government to send a sufficient force to take the Governor in—by "at once" I mean, to have them at Pembina by the middle or end of January, for there is great danger of Fenian hordes early in the spring.

NOVEMBER 22nd, 1869.

PEMBINA, U. S., Nov. 22nd, 1869.

*To General Hunt, or the Officer commanding
at Fort Abercrombie.*

SIR,—I have the honor to inform you that certain French half-breeds of the Red River Settlement have assembled with arms and in sufficient force to overawe for the time, the authorities at Fort Garry. They have also erected a barricade to prevent me from proceeding to that place to assume the Government on the transfer of authority from the Hudson's Bay Company to the Dominion of Canada. A small band of men met me at the Hudson's Bay Company's post near Pembina, and ordered me to return beyond the boundary line. As I had no force to resist them I was obliged to obey the order and am now at Pembina in American Territory.

I have just had information from Fort Garry that these outlaws have decided to send a party of men to Georgetown in Minnesota, for the purpose of burning the Hudson's Bay Company's Storehouse at that place. The avowed object of this "raid" is to destroy certain property of the Government of Canada now stored there, consisting of arms and ammunition, and also clothing and goods belonging to me and members of my party.

I have the honor to request that you will take such means as may be in your power to prevent this unlawful destruction of property. I have directed the removal of the arms and other property to Fort Abercrombie in the hope that you will allow storage in the Fort until this *émeute* is suppressed,

Any expense which may be incurred in the removal, protection, or storage of this property I shall be ready to make good as soon as I am advised of the amount.

I have the honor to be,

Sir, your obedient servant,

WM. McDougall.

DEPARTMENT OF THE SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES,

OTTAWA, December 15th, 1869.

To the Hon. Wm. McDougall, C.B., Pembina.

No. 1074 25th
of November.
22nd of No-
vember

SIR,—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt, on the 11th inst. of your letter of the 25th ultimo, covering a confidential Report made to you by Major J. Wallace, of the result of the special mission to Fort Garry,

on which you had employed him, together with a copy of your letter, addressed to General Hunt, the United States officer commanding at Fort Abercrombie, with reference to the removal to that place of the arms and ammunition which you had stored at Georgetown.

I have, &c.,

JOSEPH HOWE,
Secretary of State for the Provinces.

LAROSE'S FARM, PEMBINA, U.S., 29th November, 1869.

*The Honorable Joseph Howe, Secretary of State, &c.,
Ottawa.*

Received by
Secretary of
State for the
Provinces, 15th
December, 1869.

SIR,—I have the honor to report, that I am still at Pembina in the Territory of the United States (Messrs. Richards, Provencher, and Begg being with me), and unable, in consequence of the continued occupation of the road by armed men, to proceed to Fort Garry.

I have further to report that I have not received any instructions for my guidance on and after the day of the transfer of the Territory to Canada, nor any notice of the Order in Council, which has no doubt been passed to effect it.

In these circumstances, I am compelled to act upon the general powers and directions of my Commission, and of the Acts of Parliament, Canadian and Imperial, which seem to bear upon the case.

I have accordingly prepared a Proclamation to be issued on the first day of December, reciting so much of the several Acts of Parliament as seemed necessary to disclose the requisite authority, and stating by way of recital the fact of surrender by the Hudson's Bay Company, acceptance by Her Majesty, and Transfer to Canada, from and after the 1st December, A.D., 1869. These facts I gather from the newspapers, from a private letter to me of the Deputy Governor of the Company, and my own knowledge before I left Ottawa, that the 1st of December had been agreed upon as the date of the transfers.

In the present state of affairs in the settlement it is of the utmost importance to announce the transfer of authority in the most authentic and solemn manner possible, in order to give confidence and the protection of legality to the acts of the loyal and well disposed, and to put the mal-contented and their American advisers and sympathizers publicly and technically in the wrong. Several messages have been sent, urging me to assume authority and to authorize action *at once* against the French half-breeds, but as my previous reports will show, I decided to keep strictly within my commission, and referred those persons to the local authority for advice and direction. On the 24th inst., however, Riel and his party took possession, without resistance, of the public offices in the Fort, seized the public records and papers, and made prisoners of the Treasurer and Officers in charge of the public funds. I have not heard whether they have removed Governor McTavish from his official residence, but he is evidently *hors de combat* personally and officially. I have had no communication from him since the 19th inst., directly or indirectly, although in his last note he promised to communicate further immediately. As I have found no serious difficulty in sending and receiving from the settlement communications of a private character, I infer that the rebels have imprisoned the Governor so closely that nothing is allowed to reach him or proceed from him of which they disapprove.

On the evening of the same day, Riel made a demonstration upon the Government provisions under the charge of Mr. Snow, pretending that he only wanted to make an inventory of them. Some Canadians employed on the survey, being in the neighbourhood and indignant at this move of the rebels, as well as apprehensive that the possession of these provisions by them would greatly strengthen their position, determined to remove them by force, if necessary, to the Lower Fort of the Hudson's Bay Company; but, on con-

sideration, they felt that to bring on a collision at that moment, and on such a question, might be impolitic, and as the local authorities could not or would not act, they despatched Mr. Newcombe, a young Canadian, to me the same night, with the letter marked A. He got safely through, having run about half the way on foot, making the whole distance of 67 miles in 20 hours. He was ready to return on foot or on horseback after an hour's rest, if I had deemed it necessary. His energy, courage, and zeal, and his account of the feelings of the loyal portion of the inhabitants, inspired us all with the hope that a reaction had set in, and that as soon as the incubus of a moribund and inactive Government was removed, a call might safely be made upon the loyal and well-disposed to rally in defence of law and order. But in view of the peculiar relations existing between the French half-breeds and the rest of the native population, I thought it very undesirable to allow a "fight" to take place about Government property, until some collision had occurred which would excite the feelings of the English and Scotch half-breeds and exasperate them against the insurgents. The interruption to business, reducing thereby the price of grain and enhancing the price of merchandize; the arrest of men like Hallett, of local influence and extensive family connection; the taking of provisions without pay from the settlers, and occupying their houses without their consent; and a chance of a *fray* springing out of some of these circumstances seems to justify delay in organizing opposition to Riel's designs upon the Government pork and flour, which, if seized by him, would not strike the half-breed settlers as a very heinous offence, or one which they ought to risk their lives to prevent or punish. Moreover, the Hudson's Bay Company officers were still the nominal rulers of the settlement, and as their Sheriff (McKenny) was notoriously in the interests of the rebels, advising, aiding, and abetting them, it appeared to me better that none of my agents or avowed supporters should provoke or be parties to a collision before the 1st of December, and run the risk of finding the Sheriff and other authorities on the side of the rebels, or, what would amount to the same thing, issuing warrants against Canadians.

Accordingly I detained Mr. Newcombe for future service, and despatched by a loyal French half-breed the answer B, and by the same hand the letter C, to Governor McTavish. My plan was to hold the authorities to their duties and responsibilities as long as possible, and to delay, without wholly prohibiting the resistance of the employees and friends of the new Government. How far this plan has succeeded I am not yet aware, but I suspect that Riel will have seized the provisions before my directions reached Fort Garry, or, at all events, before the action recommended by me has been taken. I do not regard the possession of these Government Stores by Riel and his party as of very much consequence. They cannot eat them up at once, and if the measures I have taken to organize an armed force to seize Riel and his colleagues, and disperse the rank and file of his followers, should prove successful, the provisions will soon be again in our possession.

The last two mails brought me only newspapers and two or three small private letters. I am much afraid that *official* letters are detained at some point between St. Paul and this place purposely, and perhaps read and destroyed. As the postmaster here openly avows his sympathy with the half-breeds and permits one Stuttzman, referred to in a former Report, to distribute and handle the postal matter in his office. I have no great faith that my letters to Ottawa have been forwarded, if at all, without being first read. I shall therefore abstain from all details as to the operations contemplated after the 1st December. Their discovery and publication here would be sure to defeat them.

I have received a friendly letter from the Indian chief, "Pegwis," who lives at Winnipeg, in which he strongly condemns the conduct of the French half-breeds. He reminds me that they come from my own country, and are "very bad men." He wishes to see me, to shake hands and bargain about his land. He has offered his services to the Canadians in the Settlement to put down Riel and his party, evidently foreseeing that if they got the mastery, the Indian title to the land in Assiniboine will not be treated with much respect or realize much profit.

I have returned a verbal answer to his letter, expressing the most friendly feelings towards him and his people, and my desire to see them at Fort Garry as soon as possible.

I thought it better to put nothing in writing, and indeed to say nothing that could be construed into an invitation to the Indians to arm or attack any class of the inhabitants, not even those now under arms and in a state of insurrection. It is very satisfactory to find that the Indians in all directions, and under different chiefs, are well disposed, and unwilling to give any aid to the French half-breeds. I have taken pains, through the agency of loyal persons having influence with them, to arouse the apprehensions of the Indians in reference to the annexation features of the half-breed movement, and its effect upon them and their land claims. They have been quick to perceive that the outbreak bodes no good to them, and they cannot therefore be seduced into any kind of sympathy with it. This fact is already producing a marked effect upon the plans and operations of the Insurgents.

A letter appeared in a newspaper published in Yankton, Dakotah, purporting to have been written and delivered to me by two Indian chiefs, making peremptory demands for a settlement with them before entering the Territory. This letter was concocted by American schemers at Pembina, and read to the Indians who were waiting to see me. At first they consented to it, but the next day went to the village, asked to see it, and tore it up. The veracious correspondent of the Yankton newspaper, allowed it nevertheless to appear as a *bonâ fide* communication to me.

In the same newspaper, a communication under date 23rd September, detailing the plans, grievances and demands of the half-breeds, with such particularity as to show that the plot has its chief counsellor, if not its originator, in this Village. One of these conspirators the man Stuttzman, lately visited Fort Garry, and is known to be consulting and aiding the Insurgents at that place.

As far as I can learn, the priests have withdrawn latterly from active co-operation and begin to shake their heads, and speak doubtfully of the consequences likely to result from the outbreak.

Until I have received more specific instructions for my guidance after assuming the Government, and learn the view which His Excellency and Council are likely to take of the events detailed in my Reports, I do not feel myself in a position to make any special recommendation as to the measures which ought to be adopted by the Government of Canada. I have taken, and must continue to take, a large discretion and responsibility in regard to measures which must be initiated and executed within the Territory. I have hesitated to call for troops or volunteers from Canada in mid-winter. The difficulties in the way are enormous, and the chance of disaster with the present means of transportation is almost reduced to a certainty. But preparations should undoubtedly be made for a large emigration in the early spring, of such settlers as were offered last fall by Colonel Barvis, of the Township of Halifax, and by another gentleman in the County of Bruce. Settlers of this class will be a valuable, almost a necessary addition to the population of the Territory, and any expense which their transportation hither may involve ought to be readily furnished.

I have, &c.,

WM. McDUGALL.

(A.)

WINNIPEG, Wednesday, 24th November, 1869.

DEAR COLONEL,—We require definite instructions how to act under the following circumstances:—To-day, about 4 p.m., we got information that the Government stores, in Dr. Schultz's, were being seized. Captain Boulton, Mr. Codd, and self, proceeded immediately to ascertain the truth of the matter. We found *Riel* and an armed guard coming out of the back store with Dr. Schultz. I went up and asked what particular business was going on. The Doctor said, "Mr. Riel is taking an *inventory* of the stores." I replied, looking at Riel, "They are the *Queen's property*." He turned about and stamped, exclaiming angrily, "*The devil's property*," moving away at the same time. On enquiring about the matter, the Doctor told us that his carts had been stopped at the Fort, and

he went down to see about them. Saw Riel, who said that it was "merely a matter of form," but he wished to know "if the duties had been paid," and "there were no arms in the cases." The Doctor answered, "No, there were no arms." Riel, however, accompanied the Doctor to his store, for the purpose of examining them. On entering the store, Riel said, "Are these all your goods?" Doctor replied, "No, Government property," Riel then said, "By-the-bye, that reminds me I may as well take an inventory of them in case any parties should remove any portion, and it would be laid to us." In the meantime, an armed guard of four men had come up (as Dr. S. says, "a sly mode of getting access to the store.") Riel put two of them in charge, and went off intending to return. While he was away, the Doctor hired the guard, for sixpence apiece, to assist in carrying the cases into the house. They left their arms in the store, and accordingly went to work for the Doctor. While they were so employed, the Doctor sent Smith, who removed the arms and locked up the store. Riel returned some couple of hours afterwards, and found his guard "shouldering cases." He demanded entrance to the store, after soundly rating his men. The Doctor refused, and told them he would have to use force:—*this he repeated*. Finally, the key was obtained by them from Smith. The Doctor then put his back to the door, and refused entrance unless Riel promised, upon his honor, not to remove anything,—which Riel did. The Doctor further says that, at this moment (that is after they had entered the store), Hallett showed his nose round the corner, when Riel, all at once, came to the conclusion that it was rather late to take the inventory, and left an armed guard on the door. It was at this time, while they were coming out of the Doctor's store, that we arrived on the scene.

Now, there are Canadians here willing to protect the property of Canada, and remove the stores to the Stone Fort for safe keeping. We propose the following plan:—We (the Canadians) to proceed in a party of twenty or thirty with hired sleighs, to be procured in the Scotch Settlement, and go to Schultz's store about noon and remove them (the stores) down to the Stone Fort, and leave (armed of course), in charge. If we meet opposition, we will defend the stores and remove them against all comers. This will have the effect, perhaps, of precipitating matters. On the other hand, if they remove these provisions, which no doubt is their intention, you will at once see that they have gained a very important advantage over the loyal inhabitants by the possession of these stores. Hallett says, that he, *individually*, will stand by us and assist. We await the advice and instructions of the Governor to act. This will also give us an excuse to occupy the Stone Fort, where a large amount of ammunition is stored.

Your most obedient Servant,

D. A. GRANT.

P.S.—It is understood that, if we act in this matter, we act upon our own responsibility. Not wishing to compromise authority, we only desire to have *advice*.

(B.)

PEMBINA, 25th November, 1869.

D. A. Grant, Esq., Fort Garry.

MY DEAR SIR,—I trust this will reach you safely and in good time. The Governor has determined to retain the bearer of your letter for reasons which will be apparent soon. I should have been with you again long before now, but that the Governor required me to remain here for a purpose of which you will soon also be aware. With regard to the provisions and public property which you say are in danger of being seized by a band of lawless men, and removed from the custody of those who have been intrusted with them, I am instructed to convey Mr. McDougall's orders, as follows:—

- 1st. Apply to the local authorities for a sufficient police or other force to prevent it.
- 2nd. If this is refused, or if no such force can be had, apply to Governor McTavish, or the officer in charge of the Stone Fort, for permission to store the property there for

safe keeping, and ask him to give you authority to guard and defend it by the voluntary aid of the law-abiding inhabitants.

3rd. If this permission to store in the Fort is granted, remove the provisions, &c., there, and hire a sufficient number of persons to remove and defend it against all illegal attempts at appropriation,

4th. But in the event of a seizure, or attempt at seizure, by a considerable force of armed men, either before or during the removal above suggested and authorised, you are advised not to risk a collision which may cause bloodshed, unless the local authorities shall have sanctioned the organization of an armed force for the purpose of protecting the property.

Mr. McDougall has written to Governor McTavish on the subject, and asked his interference on your written demand.

Believe me, dear Mr. Grant, truly yours,

J. S. DENNIS.

(C.)

PEMBINA, November 24th, 1869.

*Wm. McTavish, Esq.,
Governor, &c., Hudson's Bay Company.*

MY DEAR SIR,—The agents of the Dominion Government, in charge of the provisions and other public property of the Government, now at Winnipeg, have represented to me that an armed party of lawless persons have attempted to seize and appropriate it. They have asked for instructions from me, and have suggested that this property be removed, under escort if necessary, to the Stone Fort for safe keeping.

I have instructed Colonel Dennis to communicate the following as my directions (see letter to Mr. Grant, 1st, 2nd, 3rd, and 4th).

May I request that you will give Mr. Grant and Mr. Snow, and any other persons who may have in lawful custody any of this property, such assistance as you can command to protect it from molestation by the lawless persons referred to. If in your judgment the proposal to remove it to the Stone Fort, and to protect it there in the way proposed by the persons who will apply to you, is feasible and under the circumstances advisable, I should feel obliged if you would give them the desired authority.

I leave the matter for the present entirely in your hands.

I have the honor, &c.,

WM. MCDUGALL.

(Telegram.)

TORONTO, 15th December, 1869.

Hon. Sir J. A. Macdonald.

St. Paul, Minn. 15th.—Private letter just received from Pembina, gives the following information :—

The Rebels have placed Governor McTavish under close guard, on account of his recent Proclamation, advising them to lay down their arms and submit to the Government. In meantime they continue to issue rations with a regularity which is making serious inroads upon the Hudson Bay goods at Fort Garry and outposts.

Captain Cameron, of Governor McDougall's party, attempted to go into Fort Garry, but was confronted at the gate by a sentinel, who, with the assistance of a sergeant, forced him back upon American soil, and upon pain of being shot, was forbidden to re-enter the lines.

H. P. DWIGHT.

DEPARTMENT OF SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES.

OTTAWA, 17th December, 1869.

The Honorable Wm. McDougall, C.B., Pembina.

Received by the Honorable Wm. McDougall, 25th December.

SIR,—Your despatch of the 29th November reached this office on the 15th instant, and created some apprehension, that you were about to issue a Proclamation, announcing the formal transfer of the Territory, which has not yet taken place, and to organize or countenance movements, which, however well intended, would have been without the sanction of law. The receipt of the papers, A. B. C., which did not come to hand till the following day, relieved this anxiety, and I have now to convey to you the satisfaction with which the numbered paragraphs in the paper marked "B" were read by the Governor General and Council.

The despatches sent to you on the 19th and 29th November, and 7th, 8th, 10th, and 11th of December, will, before this reaches you, have explained the views taken by this Government of the situation of affairs in the North-West, and the nature of the correspondence with the Imperial Government which has not yet closed. No notice has yet been received here of the issue of the Queen's Proclamation annexing the country to Canada, or of the payment of the purchase money. By this day's mail an elaborate Minute of Council goes to England.

You will, until further advised, abstain from all movements in excess of your authority, and do nothing by which the Governor and officers of the Hudson's Bay Company may be relieved of the responsibility which now rests upon them.

Should any telegraphic notice of the issue of the Queen's Proclamation reach you, I am commanded to desire that you will refrain from any action thereupon until you receive a copy of the Proclamation through this office.

I have, &c.,

JOSEPH HOWE,

Secretary of State for the Provinces.

LAROSE'S FARM, PEMBINA, U. S.

December 2nd, 1869.

The Honorable Joseph Howe, Secretary of State, &c., Ottawa.

Received by the Secretary of State for the Provinces 18th Decr. 1869.

SIR,—By the last mail, under date 29th November, I reported that I was still at this place, and that I had neither received official instruction for my guidance after assuming the Government of the North-West Territories nor any notice of the passing of the Order of Her Majesty in Council for the transfer of the North-West Territory to the Dominion. I also detailed at some length, the events which had occurred during my previous report, and indicated some of the measures I had prepared and proposed to adopt, on and after the 1st December. I also enclosed, in a separate letter, copies of correspondence respecting the Government Stores at Fort Garry, and the steps I recommended to be taken for their protection. I hope these letters have reached Ottawa safely, and assuming they have, I proceed to detail, briefly what has since occurred.

Fearing, from information I received, that my messenger with copies of the Proclamation announcing the first of December, as the date of transfer of authority from the Hudson's Bay Company to the Dominion had been intercepted, I entrusted additional copies in English and French to Colonel Dennis, who, with a trusty guide, started on the night of the 29th ultimo (the coldest night we have yet experienced), for Fort Garry. I also commissioned him to act as my "Lieutenant," and as a "Conservator of the Peace," in arraying the loyal inhabitants in defence of law and order. I gave him large powers and as he is fully aware of my views and plans, and the nature of the authority under which

he is to act, and is, moreover, acquainted with the leading men of the Settlement,—stands well in their estimation, and knows the country. I have every confidence that he will execute his orders with promptitude, discretion, and success. I do not deem it prudent to forward by this mail a copy of my Commission to him, as there is some danger that it might go in a wrong direction.

It will be seen from the paper "A" herewith, that the English and Scotch settlers and half-breeds, have at last discovered that they must choose between Riel and his American allies and advisers, and the authority of Her Majesty and the Canadian Government. Meetings have been held, with more or less secrecy in all the parishes, except those exclusively French, and a "Committee of Public Safety" organized. The movement has been much aided by the Canadians connected with the road and survey, the only persons of intelligence and apparent authority to whom the poor but well disposed settlers could look for advice. Mr. James Ross, a Scotch half-breed, recently from Canada, and mentioned in a previous report, as apparently in the confidence of the malcontents, has been exceedingly active in refuting the false stories that certain influential traders and other *traitors* have been busy in circulating. Captain Boulton, who was present at the meeting of the representatives of three parishes when the enclosed letter to me was agreed upon, has also shown zeal and discretion, as well as courage in his efforts to arouse the loyal people of the Settlement. Colonel Dennis was charged with my answer to these people, in the shape of a Commission, which on and after the first December, he could make known to them. The Proclamation itself, so anxiously looked for by the friends of Canada, will, I trust, settle all doubts in the minds of the well-disposed, and dispel the false, preposterous, but nevertheless dangerous rumours, sent out from day to day by the conspirators. One point of considerable importance in the minds of the English and Scotch settlers—hinted at in the enclosed paper, but more explicitly stated in other messages which have reached me—is the view which will be taken by Government of the claims of Loyalists serving against the Rebels for any losses to person and property which may result. I have not ventured to make a specific answer to this question, as any *rule* on the subject would be liable to abuse, but I have told Colonel Dennis to assure those who agree to serve under his order, that the Government will treat them in the same way, and with the same liberality as in Canada, or in any other parts of the empire. I have, moreover, authorized him to allow the same rates of pay, &c., as are allowed under the Canada Militia Act, to Volunteers called out in aid of the civil power.

Yesterday evening, after finding that the road was clear, I took with me Messrs. Richards and Provencher and four others of my party, and proceeded to the Hudson's Bay Company's Post near Pembina, and in order to execute on British soil, and so far in a public manner, the Proclamation and other documents which are to take effect within the Territory. I have resolved to do no *official* act on American soil, and have made arrangements to occupy the Hudson Bay Company's Post, and if necessary repel by force the attack of any such party as the one that drove us from it on the 3rd of November. It is surrounded by a high fence, and with a little improvement may be defended against a considerable force, by a few resolute men with breech-loading rifles. Fortunately we have with us a few such rifles and a small supply of ammunition. We number about a dozen, and are all good shots. I shall not openly take this position and attitude unless I hear from Colonel Dennis that he has a force in the field and is thus given Riel and his party something to do at Fort Garry. In the meantime we go to and from the "Post" well armed and prepared against surprise. The American officials and ex-officials here are a little less jubilant and swaggering in their tone since they have found that the English, Scotch, and Indians have refused to join Riel, and that resistance is being organized. I enclose a slip, cut from a St. Paul's newspaper, which shews the feelings and designs of these people. They assume in their correspondence the air of lookers-on merely, but they are in truth the chief counsellors and directors of the movement. Stuttsman is still at Fort Garry, but will probably move south very speedily when the loyal settlers with Colonel Dennis at their head come upon the scene.

I have heard from Fort Garry, of the safe arrival of the letters conveying my instructions in regard to the Government provisions. Riel had made two or three attempts to remove them, and had pointed two of the guns of the Fort on Dr. Schultz's warehouse, in which a portion of them are stored, in anticipation of resistance, but the firm attitude of the Canadians and others in the vicinity seems to have induced Riel to postpone his threatened seizure. I hope no collision has taken place over these stores, as such an event might prejudice the movement progressing so favorably in the English and Scotch Parishes.

I enclose (paper "B") copy of a second Proclamation which I deemed it my duty to issue. I hope I am right in using the name of Her Majesty as prominently as I have done. The leaders of this movement have studiously represented that they were only resisting the aggressions of Canada and not the authority of the Crown. It is necessary to meet them on this point explicitly and promptly.

Anxiously awaiting some official directions and information from you,

I have the honor to be, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

WM. McDOUGALL.

("A.")

To the Honorable Mr. McDougall.

SIR,—We, influential members of the English speaking population and loyal subjects of the British Crown, have heard that you are appointed Governor of this Territory, but we have had no certain or official information that such is the case, in fact we don't know officially that any change has taken place in the constitution of this country. Under these circumstances, there is no certainty of movement or any chance of co-operation. We will be glad to be informed, officially, what is the position of affairs; what are the intentions of the Canadian Government, and what support will be given by Government.

Circumstances are such that names cannot be given; at least it is not advisable, but * * * * * will testify to the genuineness of this communication.

Nov. 27th.

To the Honorable Mr. McDougall.

SIR,—I am requested to certify and sign this to the effect that it is a communication from the representatives of three parishes in this settlement.

("B.")

[L.S.]

THE NORTH-WEST TERRITORIES.

By His Excellency, the Honorable William McDougall, a Member of Her Majesty's Privy Council for Canada, and Companion of the Most Honorable Order of the Bath, Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories, &c., &c., &c.

To all whom these Presents shall come—GREETING:—

A PROCLAMATION !!!

WHEREAS, Her Majesty THE QUEEN, by Letters Patent, under the Great Seal of the Dominion of Canada, bearing date the *twenty-ninth* day of *September*, in the year of Our Lord one thousand eight hundred and *sixty-nine*, in the thirty-third year of Her Majesty's Reign, has been graciously pleased to *constitute* and *appoint me*, on, from and after the day to be named by *Her Majesty*; for the admission of Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory into the Union or Dominion of Canada, to be **LIEUTENANT GOVERNOR** in and over *The North-West Territories*, during Her Majesty's pleasure, and did thereby authorize and empower and require and command me, on, from and after the day aforesaid,

to do and execute all things in due manner that shall belong to my said command and the trust reposed in me, according to the several powers and instructions granted or appointed me by that, Her Majesty's Commission, and of the Act of Parliament passed in the thirty-second year of Her Majesty's Reign, intituled, "An Act for the Temporary Government of Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory when united with Canada," and the instructions given me with such Commission, or by such further instructions as may hereafter be given me in respect of the North-West Territories and the Government thereof, by *Her Majesty's Governor General* in Council, under his sign manual, or through one of *Her Majesty's Privy Council of Canada*, and according to such laws as are now, and shall hereafter be in force in the said *North-West Territories*.

And Whereas, Her Majesty has declared and named the *first day of December* instant, as the day for the admission of *Rupert's Land* and the *North-Western Territory* into the *Union* and *Dominion of Canada*; *And Whereas*, by virtue and in pursuance of "The *British North America Act, 1867*"; "The *Rupert's Land Act, 1868*," the said "Act for the Temporary Government of *Rupert's Land* and the *North-Western Territory*, when united with *Canada*," and the said Declaration and Order of *Her Majesty*, *Rupert's Land* and the *North-Western Territory* have been admitted into *Union* with, and have become and are now part of the *Dominion of Canada*, and are henceforth to be styled and known as "*The North-West Territories*."

Now Know Ye, that I have thought fit to issue this *Proclamation*, to make known *Her Majesty's said appointment* to all officers, magistrates, subjects of *Her Majesty*, and others within the said "*The North-West Territories*";—*and I do hereby require and command* that all and singular, the public officers and functionaries, holding office in *Rupert's Land*, and the *North-Western Territory*, at the time of their admission into the *Union* as aforesaid, excepting the public officer or functionary at the head of the *Administration of affairs*, do continue in the execution of their several and respective offices, duties, places and employments, *until otherwise ordered by me*, under the authority of the said last mentioned Act; *and I do hereby further require and command* that all *Her Majesty's* loving subjects, and all others whom it may concern, do take notice and govern themselves accordingly.

Given under my hand and Seal-at-arms, at Red River, in the said Territories, this Second day of December, in the year of Our Lord, One thousand eight hundred and sixty-nine, and in the Thirty-third year of Her Majesty's Reign.

WM. McDUGALL.

By Command.

J. A. N. PROVENCHER,
Secretary.

(I have asked Mr. Provencher to sign as Secretary, his formal appointment depending upon the course of events, and the requirements of the Act.)

WM. McDUGALL.

Extracts from St. Paul "Daily Press," November 21st, referred to in Mr. McDougall's letter of 2nd December.

(1) (*Letter from Fort Garry*).

WINNIPEG, November 6th, 1869.

Stirring events are in progress here. This settlement is resolved to be independent of the Canadian Dominion, and the Revolution has begun. The French settlers took the initiative; but are in full accord, in this respect, with the rest of the settlers. On October 20th and 21st, about two hundred armed men were sworn in to liberate, as their expression is, the country. At present there are six hundred men in arms and sworn in, which number will not be increased till next spring, when they will muster in about three

thousand troops. On November 2nd a detachment occupied Fort Garry, which they now hold. Their discipline is exemplary, and is not surpassed or equalled by any troops I ever saw. To judge from present appearances, the whole Settlement will soon wheel into line to keep the Canadians out. I think they may be successful. The country is very easily defended, except against troops coming through Minnesota and Dakota. But it is not believed possible that our Government will allow Canadian troops to pass over that route. The consequences would be fearful. The French half-breeds, seven thousand in number, that is, one half of the population of the settlement, would desert their home-steads, join the Indians on the plains, and carry on a war that would annihilate this settlement. Any attempt at coercion would occasion a wide-spread destruction of life and property; and such an act of hostility to the half-nomadic population of this region on the part of our Government as would be implied in passing a Canadian army over American soil to make war on this people, would draw down their vengeance, and all the horrors of an Indian and a half-breed war upon the frontier settlements of Minnesota and Dakota. It is, therefore, of grave consequence to the safety of the American border, that our Government should not league itself with the Canadian Government in the attempt to subjugate this people. Let no such concession be made to Canada, and all will be right. At the next Session of the Canadian Parliament, the opposition is likely to be in the majority, and will probably repeal the act purchasing this Territory. At any rate, they will vote neither men nor money to carry on a war or conquest against its inhabitants. Events of vast importance depend on the policy of the United States Government in this matter. These events will disclose themselves in the near future. It is not my business to predict, but to record, and I leave them to your best conjectures.

PEMBICA.

(2)

(Letter from Pembina.)

PEMBINA, November 8th, 1869.

On Tuesday, the 2nd instant, the Red River troops took quite possession of Fort Garry and the Government House. Winnipeg is under martial law. No soldier is permitted to take a drop of spirits. The most stringent discipline is observed. If a citizen or outsider is found drunk or disorderly he is promptly arrested and confined until sober and quiet.

Never before has there been such complete order, and never before has there been such perfect security to person and property in the Red River settlements, as at the present time. The expelled Canadian officials are still encamped near Pembina. They are building, and seem determined to go into winter quarters here. The Hon. J. A. N. Provencher, Member of the Council, and Territorial Secretary, is disposed to go home in disgust; but His Excellency Governor McDougall will not consent thereto. The Governor has called upon the Canadian Government for troops, &c., and, inasmuch as it is impossible to import them *via* any other route, permission to pass them through United States territory will be requested.

But it is to be hoped that our government will not disgrace itself, and bring civil war upon the Red River people by granting such an unreasonable request.

The people being united, no civil war can exist until coercion be attempted; and, if our Government very wisely declines said request, coercion is out of the question, and, so long as civil war does not exist, the rights of person and property will be respected.

The American residents remain non-committal; but, should it unfortunately come to blows, they, to a man, will be found in the front ranks of the citizen troops.

Captain Cameron, one of the Governor's law-makers, a half-witted unfortunate, proposes to head 400 Canadians (when they arrive) and penetrate the territory as far as Lake Winnipeg! Should those 400 soldiers be as brainless as the proposed "head," the penetration would not be great.

The following are the names and official character of the expelled officials :

His Excellency Wm. McDougall, Governor.

A. N. Richards, Attorney-General and Member of the Council.

Capt. Cameron, Member of Council and *Penetrator*.

Alexander Begg, Collector of Customs.

Col. Dennis, Surveyor General.

Dr. Jackes, Councilman and Pill Driver.

Frank McDougall, John Connor, J. F. Snow, and others, subordinates.

I am sorry to inform you that Governor McTavish is very ill, and not expected to recover.

SPECTATOR.

(3) *(Further from Pembina.)*

PEMBINA, Nov. 6th, 1869.

As your readers may not get tired of hearing news about the insurrection of the Red River Settlement, B. N. A., I will inform them that it is now in full vigor. We received information this morning, by the mail-carrier, that the Insurrectionary forces took possession of Fort Garry, without any resistance, last Tuesday, the 2nd inst., and are now completing the organization of their provisional Government, to supercede the Government *de facto* of the Hudson's Bay Company.

I stated, in my last correspondence, that Mr. McDougall and suite were to leave Pembina on that day, for the Dominion of Canada, but I would inform you now that his horses, needing rest, he concluded to take his quarters in our peaceable locality, until the troubles at Garry have subsided, or his quadrupeds get able to carry his future Excellency further on. The prevailing opinion, however, is that he will have to winter, not in the land of pemmican, but breathe the air of freedom, liberty and independence, our good country has been endowed with, till next spring.

The other day His Excellency, *to be*, was at Frank Rose's, one mile above this point, examining claims lying on the west side of the Red River of the North, making, in the meantime, many inquiries about our Government surveys, leaving our citizens to infer that he is going to take a homestead in our blessed territory of liberty.

It might be well to observe also that, so far, the Insurrectionists have behaved in an exemplary manner. Life, property, decorum, moral discipline, sobriety, and everything desirable, have been strictly observed. When Mr. McDougall and suite were driven out of their country, boys attached to his party, exchanged words rather harsh, but the guard took them coolly, and replied very politely. The Insurrectionary forces number now between five and six hundred.

PEMBINA.

(Telegram.)

ST. PAUL, MINNESOTA,
17th December, 1869.

Hon. Joseph Howe.

Secretary of State.

I have just received news that Colonel Dennis, Surveyor General, has succeeded in raising and arming some two hundred (200) Swampy Indians, and a number of their English half-breed relations—that they have garrisoned the Stone Fort—that McDougall has organized another force of the hostile Sioux of Portage la Prairie, under the lead of Canadians, and that as soon as these forces form a junction, they will march on the Insurgent's force at and near Fort Garry. General Riel has called in his reserve of French

half breeds, who were temporarily absent. Over three hundred (300) men reported at head-quarters within a few hours from issuing the call, and a collision was hourly expected at the date of my advice.

J. A. WHELOCK.

(Telegram.)

TORONTO, 18th December, 1869.

To Sir John Macdonald,

Letter dated Pembina, December 6th. says: The Red River mail, just in, brings the most exciting news, Governor McDougall has succeeded in raising a body of Indians who are marching to the Stone Fort under Colonel Dennis, and it's feared (?) collision has already taken place. The writer says, mail is just closing, and no time to write further particulars. A letter, same date, from Governor McDougall, says, on December the first the Government of the Queen was announced through its Canadian representatives. On same day a force of loyal men occupied Stone Fort, and the loyal white and half-breeds began rapidly to rally and organize. The insurgents were beginning to disperse, and had withdrawn their forces from the printing office and other places in the Winnipeg. Riel, the chief of insurgents, still remained in possession of Fort Garry with four hundred of his followers. Another letter says: mail just in from Garry, brings news that Colonel Dennis has a force of 300 men, consisting of Swampy Indians and their half-breeds relations, that they have garrisoned the Stone Fort, and are expected to form junction with Canadians and Sioux of Portage la Prairie, and march against insurgents at Fort Garry. Riel had called in his reserves who were temporarily absent, and three hundred (300) men reported at his head-quarters in few hours after issuing the call. A collision was soon looked for. The reports current that McTavish had been taken by insurgents from his sick bed, and together with his subordinates, confined in prison, and that Insurgents had helped themselves to property of Hudson's Bay Company, was not generally believed. The *St. Paul's Press* of this morning, editorial, on Red River trouble, says: "Governor McDougall has assumed a fearful responsibility in thus subjecting the Settlement to the terrible risk involved in Indian war. It is but just to say that, as our correspondents at Pembina evinces a natural sympathy for the Insurgents, and obtains their information doubtless from Insurgent's side, it is possible they may be to some extent misled. We publish, of course, only such information as we get, and must necessarily base our remarks on the state of affairs as presented to us. There are grounds for belief that McDougall is entering into Indian trouble without consultation with Canadian Government, as it is stated in Ottawa despatch of yesterday, that Dominion Government may not complete purchase of North-West till Spring."

H. P. DWIGHT.

PEMBINA, 6th December, 1869.

The Honorable Joseph Howe, Secretary of State, &c.,
Ottawa.,

Received by
the Secretary
of State for the
Provinces, 24th
December.

SIR,—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your despatch of the 19th November, transmitted under cover from St. Paul to the Deputy Collector of this Port.

It is very satisfactory to me to find that the Privy Council entirely approves of my conduct under the trying circumstances in which I was placed, on my entrance into the North-West Territories. The events and the difficulties with which I have had to deal since the date of the letter to which your despatch is a reply, have been very fully detailed in the reports I have had the honor to forward to you, and I hope my conduct may, in all these difficult circumstances, be found to have

equally deserved the approbation of His Excellency in Council. The large discretion and "freedom of action," which almost of necessity have been allowed to me, I have endeavoured to exercise to the best of my ability in the interests of the Canadian Government, and for the maintenance of the authority of the Crown in this part of the Dominion.

It is not easy, amid the confusion and discomforts of camp life, and the building of winter quarters on the Prairie in November, to make a clear and adequate statement of all the facts and circumstances which have, from day to day, formed the basis of judgment, or supplied the motives for action. I trust, however, that the papers, letters and reports I have forwarded, with my own observations, have enabled the Privy Council to understand the difficulties of the situation, if not in every case to pronounce as to the best means available for overcoming them.

I enclose herewith (marked "2 A,") Colonel Dennis's first report, from his Head Quarters, at the Stone Fort, 15 miles below Fort Garry. A reference to one of Mr. Dawson's maps will show his position, and its relation to the other places mentioned in his report. In my despatch of the 2nd inst., I stated the purpose for which he was sent, and in general terms, the powers I had given him. It appears he found that the English and Scotch half-breeds, and the Indians of the mission, as well as a considerable number of the French half-breeds were ripe for a movement in support of order and authority. From a confidential report, by a person who had access to Riel's Council, I learn that the news of this movement at the Stone Fort, and the reading of my Proclamation (which was opportunely produced and read in their meeting on Wednesday) had a most tranquillizing effect. Riel said "this puts a different face on the matter," and, as my informant says, "expressed much loyalty." He appealed to the English delegates (some of whom still remained in his convention to watch its proceedings) to "help them peaceably to get their rights." The English demanded a statement in writing of "what these rights were." The French said they must have an hour to consider. At the expiration of the hour they presented a paper, of which a copy is enclosed, marked "2 B." The English refused to be parties to this demand, alleging that the Proclamation showed they had no right to make it—that they must accept the new Government, and trust that all they could justly ask would be granted. Riel was indignant at their refusal to join in a deputation to me, with his *ultimatum*, and declared he would bear it himself. Nothing, however, was decided up to Thursday at noon. Riel's armed guards were withdrawn from the town after the posting of the Proclamation, and also from the store house containing the Government provisions. Fort Garry was still held by a force of 30 or 40 men.

I enclose (paper "2 C.") a letter of a private character, from Mr. Mair, which mentions some further particulars; it also confirms some of the statements I have detailed on the authority of their correspondents.

I feel very confident that this prompt display of vigour, and the determination to assist, and maintain by force, if need be, the authority of the new Government, from the day and hour of its expected birth, will inspire all the inhabitants of the Territory with respect for your representative, and compel the traitors and conspirators to cry "God save the Queen," or beat a hasty retreat. The "Prime Conspirator" Stuttzman, as I anticipated in my last despatch, did not wait for Col. Dennis to get his hands upon him, but made his appearance here the day after the Proclamation was issued, very subdued and crestfallen.

I notice the remark in your despatch that I can "claim or assert no authority in the Hudson's Bay Territory, until the Queen's Proclamation reaches me through this (your) office." If I had so read my Commission and the Acts of Parliament, the Rebel Government would have been formally inaugurated during the interregnum which must have occurred between the 1st December (which the Rebels as well as the Hudson's Bay Company's agents know and believed to be the date of the transfer), and the time when your messenger could reach me. He, probably, would have met me at St. Cloud or St. Paul, if I had lived to get so far, with no disposition or power to return without an army at my back. You can judge from the tone of the American newspapers, and the action of the Legislature of Minnesota at its last Session, (extract "2 D") to say nothing of the Fenians, who have their emissaries here and at Fort Garry, what facilities would be given

for the transportation of a Canadian force in such an event as that stated. My conviction is, that we would have had to fight at a much later date, and at a great disadvantage, a very different enemy from that which now melts away before a Proclamation, and a "Conservator of the Peace."

I shall await the arrival of your messenger, before taking the oaths of office, or performing any but necessary acts for the protection of life and property. I must trust that the same necessity will be my justification, if I have committed an error, in assuming that the transfer of the Territory to the Dominion, did actually take place on the 1st December, and that my Commission, came into force at the same time.

I have, &c.,

Wm. McDougall.

("2 A.")

STONE FORT, LOWER SETTLEMENT,
December 2nd, 5 P.M.

Honorable William McDougall, C. B., Lieut-Governor, Pembina.

MY DEAR MR. McDOUGALL,—I arrived at William Hallett's on the Assiniboine at 5 a.m. yesterday morning, after a more than usually disagreeable trip. I immediately sent up for * * * and * * *, who came down shortly after. I gathered, from their conversation, that there was little doubt that public sentiment would now sustain a movement to put down by force of arms the refractory French. At the same time, it was clear that, personally, they deprecated a movement in that direction, fearing that people like themselves, of large property, would suffer much injury, should hostilities ensue. * * I found, of opinion, that the public would now respond to a call.

I read my Commission, as also the Proclamation, one of the English copies of which I gave to Mr. * * to be produced at the meeting with the Insurgents, and then came to the village.

On my way up, I should have mentioned, I spent a couple of hours with Mr. * * , and was pleased to find that his views of the situation, as regards the feelings of his people, had undergone considerable changes, so much so that he had been busying himself, for the last few days, in visiting among his people, and making a list of those who were willing to take up arms against Riel's party. These, he told me, amounted to ninety-six. I arranged with him that, should I find the same feeling to exist among the Scotch and English, I would let him know when he was to organize his men, and hold himself in readiness for orders.

I found an uneasy and excited state of feeling in the village. Dr. Schultz felt that himself, and family, and property, so he told me, were in imminent danger, and advised me not to be seen about the village, and to get out of it as soon as possible, or I would assuredly be made a prisoner. After seeing Mr. * * and other Canadians, and showing them my Commission, I left for the purpose of satisfying myself further as to public opinion in the Settlement.

By this time it was 6 o'clock P.M., and I came on, introduced myself to Mr. Flett, the master of this Fort, showed him my Commission, and took possession. He was very kind, and showed every desire to further the object in view; placed one large building entirely at my disposal, and undertook at once to see to the lighting and heating of it.

By eight o'clock there were some 70 young men assembled in a large room in an upper part of this building, and one of the gentlemen gave them an hour's drill.

I read the Queen's Proclamation to them, which was enthusiastically received. A guard for the Fort volunteered for the night from those present, which was increased by a reinforcement from Chief Prince's band of some 70 men to 120 men. I have sent the Indians home, all but 50, who, with the chief, I have retained for the present, to serve as a permanent guard to the Fort. I proposed to avail myself of their services in that way,

rather than by allowing the Indian element to be mixed up in any actual fighting just at present.

There was an excellent feeling exhibited by these poor men. They cheered, and fired off their guns enthusiastically, on being called upon to cheer the Queen, and a distribution of provisions and tobacco sent them away happy.

The chief relieves his guard without the imposing ceremony observable among regular soldiers; but I doubt not, nevertheless, it will take a very active enemy to get into the Fort, without the knowledge of the red-skinned sentries.

This place is capable of easy defence against anything but artillery, and it must have been nothing but fear of arousing the English half-breeds that prevented its being seized and occupied by the Insurgents.

I have taken pains to make known to-day, through the Settlement, my presence here; and that my intention is to raise a force from among the people with which to enforce a restoration of public order, and I expect a response of from one to two hundred people this evening, when I shall commence to enrol and organize.

I find Major Boulton of great service, and have called in Mr. Hart's party, with a view to using himself and other members of his party, who are all cadets, in drilling and otherwise assisting.

I have ordered 20 fat cattle, which will be ready for use by Monday next, and will have no difficulty in procuring other necessary supplies.

I have sent Mr. Webb, who is surveying up the Assiniboine, who is a volunteer officer of very considerable experience, full instructions to proceed to the Portage without delay, and there to organize four companies of 50 men each, equip and provision them, and then report to me, drilling them, in the meantime, industriously. The other gentlemen in his party, including Mr. Newcomb, are all cadets of the Military Schools, and I have, therefore, directed him to take them up to assist him in drilling and organizing the companies. I shall, fortunately, have a Military School man to command each of the companies in the whole force. The other and subordinate officers, I will let the men select from among themselves.

The companies will be thrown into one battalion, of which I shall take the immediate command, with Major Boulton as second.

I hope, and believe, your delivery from the humiliating situation you are now in, is a mere matter of a very short time. You had, therefore, better get things in readiness to move in where you may be advised.

I sent Judge Black a request last evening that he would call upon me, and he has accordingly been here a good part of the day. I wished to consult him as to the expediency of my proclaiming Martial Law in the Territory, so as to enable me to seize upon Stuttsman, who still remains at Winnipeg, no doubt aiding and abetting the Rioters. The idea of such a thing seemed to frighten him, and he begged of me to delay it for a day or two, as he thought there was a strong hope of the Council, still, I suppose, in Session (as we have not heard the result) taking steps to dissolve the whole thing. I agreed to the suggestion; but so soon as I may have a force to back me up, without I am satisfied on consulting Mr. Ross that it would be undesirable, I shall take that course.

Should we succeed in getting hold of the prime conspirator named, I shall put him in a strong room in this place, under the charge of my friend Pima, the Indian Chief, and his warriors, until he may be delivered by some due, but we shall hope, tedious course of Law.

I should like to have ascertained the result of the Council referred to, before closing this letter, but it is now six P.M. of the 2nd, and I am loth to detain the messenger longer, as I know your anxiety to hear from me.

Believe me, dear Sir,

Sincerely yours,

J. S. DENNIS.

P.S.—I have written Mr. **** by this messenger, to notify his men, and then come to me for orders; have also reported my arrival and intentions to Governor McTavish, and sent him a copy of my Commission.

J. S. D.

(2 "B.")

WINNIPEG, December 2, 1869.

The Hon. Mr. McDougall,

SIR,—Having received a letter from Colonel Dennis, from the Stone Fort, where he arrived last night, instructing me to forward a report of the proceedings of Riel's Council, I enclose the Resolutions passed by the French delegates, without any concurrence from the English-speaking portion of the Council.

**** came up this afternoon for volunteers, and collected all the Canadians, to the number of about 22. Riel got wind of the movement, and has guards on the road to Pembina, believing it to be an arrangement to bring yourself in. I am in hopes they will reach the Stone Fort in safety.

Mr. Caldwell states that Riel's Council were deserting him, and that Twenty-four hours would settle the thing, if no blood was spilled to-night.

The Rebels seized both of the printing offices, and the Proclamation had to be written.

I have the honor to be, in great haste,

Your obedient Servant,

D. S. MUSKINS.

(2 "C.")—Wanting.

Copy of Resolutions referred to in the preceding.

1. The right to elect our own Legislature.
2. The Legislature to have the power to pass all laws local to the Territory over the veto of the Executive, by a two-third vote.
3. No act of the Dominion Parliament (local to the Territory) to be binding upon the people, until sanctioned by their representatives.
4. All sheriffs, magistrates, and school trustees, to be elected by the people.
5. A free homestead, and freehold law.
6. A portion of the public lands to be appropriated to the benefit of schools, the building of roads, and parish buildings.
7. A guarantee to connect Winnipeg by Rail with the nearest line of Railroad; the land grant for such road or roads to be subject to the Legislature of the Territory.
8. For a given number of years, all public expenses of the Territory, Civil, Military and Municipal, to be paid out of the Dominion Treasury.
9. The Military to be composed of the people now existing in the Territory.
10. That the French and English languages be common in the Legislature and Courts, and all public documents, and Acts of Legislature, be printed in both languages.
11. That the Judge of the Supreme Court speak French and English.
12. Treaties to be concluded and ratified between the Government and the several Tribes of Indians of the Territory, calculated to ensure peace on the Frontier.
13. That these rights be granted to us by Mr. McDougall before he be admitted into the Country. If he have not the power himself to grant them, he must get an Act of Parliament passed, expressly securing us those rights, and until such Act be obtained, stay outside the boundary line of the Territory.

A PROPOSITION TO MR. McDOUGALL.

ST. PAUL "DAILY PIONEER," NOV. 21ST.

[2. D.]

The distinguished Canadian gentleman, now sojourning at Pembina, will probably have leisure in his winter quarters to consider the best means of establishing his authority at Selkirk, upon sure foundations. And it must now be apparent to a politician of his astuteness, that it would have been wiser, simultaneously with the negotiation between the Hudson's Bay Company and the Earl of Granville, to have consulted in some form the wishes and feelings of the party most interested—namely, the people who have occupied the Red River country for the last fifty years. Such a *plebiscite* would have had only one result: the declaration would have been almost unanimous for the Canadian connection; and, in that case, MR. McDOUGALL would have gone forward with all the sanction and *prestige* of the popular voice.

The Legislature of Minnesota were not wanting with a word of excellent advice on this point. We find, by reference to the General Laws of the Tenth Session, under date of March 8, 1868, that the following Resolutions were adopted and communicated to the Government at Washington:

Resolved, By the Legislature of the State of Minnesota, * * * That we regret to be informed of a purpose to transfer the Territories between Minnesota and Alaska to the Dominion of Canada, by an order in Council at London, without a vote of the people of Selkirk and the settlers upon the sources of the Saskatchewan River, who largely consist of emigrants from the United States, and we would respectfully urge that the President and Congress of the United States shall represent to the Government of Great Britain that such action shall be an unwarrantable interference with the principle of self government, and cannot be regarded with indifference by the people of the United States.

"That the Legislature of Minnesota would rejoice to be assured that the cession of North-West British America to the United States, accompanied by the construction of a Northern Pacific Railroad, are regarded by Great Britain and Canada as satisfactory provisions of a treaty, which shall remove all grounds of controversy between the respective countries."

These friendly suggestions failed to change the Anglo-Canadian policy, and it now remains for the Ottawa Ministry to determine whether it is not still expedient to authorize some formal expression by the inhabitants of Selkirk. Perhaps, also, the Canadians might find in the proposition of a cession of the North-West Territory to the United States, a potent agency to secure access to American Markets, on terms even more satisfactory than by the abrogated treaty of June, 1854. At present, even if Mr. McDOUGALL makes his way to Fort Garry, this North-West acquisition, with its half-breed and Indian incumbrances, will be a burden and a snare to Canada; but if its transfer to the United States, will assist to a commercial union with the United States, will it not be better, not only for Canada, but even for the Honorable WILLIAM McDOUGALL himself, whom we hereby nominate as the first United States Senator from Selkirk.

(Telegram.)

ST. PAUL, MINNESOTA, December 1th, 1859.

To Sir John A. Macdonald.

Report credited here, Governor McTavish under arrest; situation grave, if not critical; sympathy here wholly with insurgents not at all probable. Can take in my written documents from Ottawa; to meet this would strengthen my hands considerably, and not clash with McDougall's Commission; if appointed to Privy Council, say eight

(8) days hence. This I ask not on personal grounds, but as giving assurance to malcontents that promises made on the part of Government would be performed in good faith. Be assured will not compromise Government; will be in advance of Thibault and De Salaberry; answer immediately telegram to Kittson; assent or dissent. Operator, mark on the envelope. Private and confidential.

DONALD A. SMITH.

OTTAWA, December 17th, 1869.

PRIVATE.

To N. W. Kittson, St. Paul, Minnesota.

Smith can state his appointment as one of the Council of Territory, and inform McDougall to that effect.

JOHN A. MACDONALD.

(Telegram.)

TORONTO, 20th December, 1869.

To Sir John A. Macdonald.

I have just received the following message from St. Paul, just as received, and am informed, at same time, that the news is from Insurgent sources, which it is quite evident is the case.

H. P. DWIGHT.

ST. PAUL, MINNESOTA, 20th December.

"News just received that a company of mounted Insurgents arrived at the Hudson's Bay Company's Fort, near Pembina on the night of the 9th instant, and took possession on the 10th. The greater part of McDougall's agents and emissaries, including Schultz, Bowen, and Hallet, have been captured. Colonel Dennis is skulking about until he can reach American Territory, McDougall is absolutely without even a faction save some fifty Swamp Indians, the Balance having deserted. Another correspondent says: Efforts of Colonel Dennis to organize a counter revolution have failed. The whole population is a unit. Schultz, Bowen, Major Wallace, and fifty others, are prisoners; no blood shed. The French under Riel are in undisputed possession of the whole country. There are sixty Swamp Indians yet in the Lower Fort who are not intrefered with because considered harmless. It is said McDougall is preparing to come back. Another says, James McKay and family have fled to St. Joseph, on the seventh (7th) instant, when the prisoners were taken, more than 600 insurgents were occupying Fort Garry. The prisoners were all taken at Dr. Schultz's and armed for a fight. Colonel Dennis has fled.

(Telegraph.)

TORONTO, December 20th, 1869.

To Sir John A. Macdonald.

I have just received the following from St. Paul. Red River mails arrive at Pembina from Fort Garry by British mail Carrier from Pembina to Abercrombie, twice a week by messenger, and from Abercrombie to St. Cloud, twice a week by stage, and thence by railroad, arriving here every Wednesday and Saturday. Returning, it sometimes happens mails fail to connect at Pembina, throwing them over three days. Mail leaves St. Paul for Abercrombie every

Monday and Wednesday and Friday morning, thence North. I have had an interview with
 * * * * * concerning the trouble. He has no faith in reports that McDougall is raising an Indian force, or that he is attempting to enter the country by force. He says the mass of the intelligent Red River inhabitants feel that Canadian Government has ignored them to great extent, and that the recent actions of those representing Canada here, tended to strengthen the feeling, and that this is the reason there is so little enthusiasm or strength manifested by party who favor McDougall. He thinks reasonable concessions on the part of Canada Government would quiet the Rebels, and, he believes if Governor McDougall were given an opportunity to explain his mission and state his case, the opposition to him would cease and bloodshed be prevented; but at present the insurgents, who are chiefly buffalo hunters in the summer, and out of employment during greater part of winter, are not in right mood to listen to Governor McDougall or hold interview with him. He believes great mass of letters published here are from friends of insurrection, and due allowance should be therefore made. General Hancock, I understand, will send no troops to Pembina unless he receives positive information that hostilities have broken out, and that the American settlers on frontier are in danger of being troubled by Indians. It is generally believed here that the mails at Pembina are tampered with, and suspicion that the Postmaster at that place sympathizes with, and favors the insurgents.

H. P. DWIGHT.]

(Telegraph.)

TORONTO, 21st December, 1869.

To Sir John A. Macdonald.

When news of difficulty first reached us, I sent a telegram to Governor McDougall, Pembina, via St. Paul, suggesting that he should mail to St. Paul or St. Cloud, to be telegraphed me, any information which might be of public interest. I have just received the following; signed, W. M. D.

PEMBINA, December 9th, via St. Cloud, Minn.

The Governor and party are still here; Colonel Dennis is at Stone Fort, below Fort Garry, it is said he has seven hundred (700) men and fifty (50) Indians. Riel said to have two or three hundred (200 or 300) men, French, in Fort Garry; no actual collision yet. Governor does not believe will be any fighting. English and Scotch Canadians and Indians are all loyal, and will fight if necessary to put down Riel. Americans here frightened at prospects of Indian war. Story that Sioux are on the war path. The same persons who advised half-breeds to keep out Governor, now urge him to stop Indian war, and threaten him if he don't. He has had interview with those persons, and told them he had not authorised Indians, but those who kindled the fire must help to put it out. Charged them with intercepting his messages and thus preventing people knowing his wishes. Weather, fine, snow falling to day about eight inches deep.

H. P. DWIGHT.

(Telegraph.)

TORONTO, December 21st, 1869.

To Sir John A. Macdonald.

Further reports through insurgent sources from Pembina say, that Schultz, Bown, Mair, and Ross were arrested, that Dennis was getting out of the way with his force, and that insurgents were to watch McDougall's movements from the Fort, opposite Pembina.

H. P. DWIGHT.

TORONTO, December 23rd, 1869.

To Sir John A. Macdonald.

There is a letter published this morning in the *Buffalo Express*, signed John Bannister, U.S.A., Fort Abercrombie, December fourteenth, in which the writer says: "I am expecting orders every day to proceed to Pembina, with a detachment of soldiers to protect Government property at that place, and to look after Governor McDougall. It having been reported here that he has been enlisting troops on American soil for the purpose of forcing his way to Fort Garry, which is to be the head quarters of his Government. If he can get there."

H. P. DWIGHT.

(Telegraph.)

SIMCOE, December 20th, 1869.

To Sir John A. Macdonald.

Beware, Sioux hereditary enemy of the Chippewas, Crees, Red River settlers, and the Assiniboine. McDougall entering that country under Sioux auspices, places the Government against those they would conciliate. Complication arising of a disastrous nature, and such as I was afraid would occur, levying unauthorised war ought to be put a stop to at once, if success attends Mr. McDougall, in the first instance, the hostile feeling will remain.

JAMES ERMATINGER.

OTTAWA, December 27th, 1869.

James Ermatinger, Esq., Simcoe.

MY DEAR SIR,—Nobody here has any idea of employing the Sioux in the Red River country.

Yours truly,

JOSEPH HOWE.

(Telegraph.)

TORONTO, January 14th, 1870.

To Sir John A. Macdonald.

Georgetown, Minnesota, 7th, St. Cloud, 13th, Dr. Tupper, Captain Cameron and Mrs. Cameron returned here last p.m. Father Thibault and DeSilberry were to have an audience with the Council to explain matters. Dr. Tupper was two (2) days in Fort Garry. 800 half-breeds had joined Riel's standard. Rumored that large number Sioux on way to Fort Garry. All Canadian parties still imprisoned, and no sign of their being released.

H. P. DWIGHT;

DEPARTMENT OF SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES,

OTTAWA, 24th December, 1869.

To the Hon. Wm. McDougall, C.B.
Pembina.

SIR,—Your despatch, dated Pembina, 2nd December, and its enclosures A and B, reached this office on the 18th instant, and were promptly laid before the Governor General in Council.

As it would appear from these documents that you have used the Queen's name without her authority—attributed to Her Majesty acts which she has not yet performed—

and organized an armed force within the Territory of the Hudson's Bay Company, without warrant or instructions, I am commanded to assure you that the grave occurrences which you report have occasioned here great anxiety.

The exertion of military force against the misguided people now in arms, even if under the sanction of law, was not to be hastily risked, considering the fearful consequences which might ensue, were the Indians, many of them but recently in contact with the white inhabitants of the neighbouring States, drawn into the conflict. But as the organization and use of such a force by you was, under the circumstances, entirely illegal, the Governor General and Council cannot disguise from you the weight of responsibility you have incurred.

Acting on the belief that the country would be quietly transferred, with the general assent of the inhabitants, all the preparatory arrangements were made, as you were aware, in anticipation that, on or about the 1st December, the Territory would be surrendered by the Company to the Queen, and that thereupon, Her Majesty would issue Her Proclamation, *fixing a day for the Union of the country with Canada.*

The Proclamation, when officially communicated to you, would enable you, under the Commission and authority given in anticipation of that event, to enter legally, *upon the appointed day*, on the discharge of your official duties as Governor of the North West.

In the Commission issued on the 23rd September, you were empowered to enter upon the duties of Government, only "on, from, and after the day to be named" in the Queen's Proclamation; and in the instructions handed to you with the Commission, you are directed to proceed to Fort Garry, and "be ready to assume the Government of the Territories on their actual transfer to Canada."

That you clearly understood this limitation of authority was hoped from your letter from Pembina, of the 7th November, addressed to Governor McTavish, and communicated to this Department, in which you say "I shall remain here until I hear officially of the transfer of authority, and shall then be guided by circumstances as to what I shall say and do," and because, in your letter of the 14th November, addressed to this Department, you thus refer to some injudicious proposal made by your friends: "the recommendation that I should issue a Proclamation, is not made for the first time, but I have uniformly replied that until the transfer of the Territory has taken place, and I am notified of the fact, I shall not assume any of the responsibilities of Government."

The peaceful surrender of the country was assumed throughout the negotiations, and this Government never claimed or pretended to exercise any authority within North West, until invested with the Sovereignty by the terms of the Queen's Proclamation.

The transfer of the Territories would, no doubt, have been proclaimed on or about the 1st December, had not your report of the 31st October, and the documents which accompanied it, changed the whole position of affairs, and thrown upon this Government grave responsibilities of a very novel character. In those papers you represented that serious obstruction had been opposed to your entrance into the country, that a large number of persons were opposed to the establishment of the authority of the Dominion, that a Provisional Government had been formed, and the roads barricaded and guarded. That some of the Catholic Clergy were openly abetting these movements, and that the officers of the Hudson's Bay Company, if not aiding the revolutionists, were unable to control them.

Your despatch was received here on the 19th November, and on the 26th those of the 5th and 17th came to hand, from which it appeared that the insurrectionary movement had still continued without check, and that the Hudson's Bay Officers were powerless, and that you had been driven out of the country.

The facts disclosed in these despatches entirely changed the basis upon which the negotiations, in perfect good faith on the part of the Dominion, had, up to that time, been conducted with the Hudson's Bay Company, and with the Imperial Government.

If, with the facts before them, the Canadian Government accepted the responsibility of governing, or rather, assuming the Government of a country that could only be recovered by conquest, at a vast distance from the base of operations, and which, for many

months, could only be approached through the United States, they could hardly justify an act of such precipitancy to Parliament and the country; while it is equally clear that if you were invested with the legal title to govern without being able to get into Rupert's Land, or exercise any authority, the revolutionary Government would be strengthened by your weakness, and would, in fact, (the Proclamation having superseded Governor McTavish) be the only Government in the Territory until put down by force of arms.

It was a matter of necessity then, rather than choice, to delay the issue of the Queen's Proclamation, and it was assumed here that the necessity would be as apparent to you as it was to the Privy Council.

To postpone the surrender by the Company until it was able to transfer, not only its own rights, but the Territory itself, to Her Majesty; to stay the issue of the Queen's Proclamation, and to leave with the Hudson's Bay Company and the Imperial Government the obligation of enforcing order, and asserting the rights of the Sovereign, was the first duty of this Government; and the Governor General and Council had hoped that this would be as obvious to you as to them.

They had another duty, and to that they addressed themselves without delay. It was to disabuse the minds of the people of Rupert's Land of the erroneous impressions under which, there was too much reason to fear, that they had acted, and to restore tranquillity by peaceful means. The measures taken with this view were explained to you in my despatches of the 19th and 20th November, and of the 7th, 8th, 10th, 11th, and 17th December. In none of these despatches will there be found any warrant or authority for the proceedings reported in your despatch of the 2nd December. It is to be regretted that they had not reached you sooner; but the sanguine hope is entertained here that, if no collisions have taken place, or blood been shed till you have read those despatches, and conferred with the gentlemen who have been sent to Red River, matters may yet wear a more cheerful aspect, and the Government of the Territory be assumed with some guarantee for order, and with all the formalities of law. Whether this hope is realised or not, your duty is plain; and I am commanded by his Excellency to instruct you to remain at Pembina until you can get peaceable access to Fort Garry, with the assent, and under the protection of the Hudson's Bay Company authorities; that you are to take every means of removing the misapprehensions that exist in the minds of the residents, by explanations and otherwise; and that you are to exercise no acts of authority on behalf, or in the name, of the Government of Canada, until officially informed that the Queen's Proclamation has issued, and until you shall have assumed the Government, and taken the oaths of office, on or after the day fixed in it for the union of the countries.

As the course of action proposed by you in your despatch of the 2nd December was to be carried out before an answer could possibly reach you, I have delayed replying for some days, in order to learn, if possible, the result of your policy; but the receipt of your despatch of the 6th instant, which reached me on the 23rd with its enclosures, 2A, 2B, and 2C; and the course taken by Col. Dennis, as described in those papers, make it necessary, without further delay, to send this despatch by a special messenger.

I wish I could inform you, that this report had entirely relieved the Governor General and Council from the anxiety already expressed. It is true that no blood had been shed up to the 6th, and you had not carried out your intention of occupying the Stockade near Pembina with an armed party, but the proceedings of Colonel Dennis, as reported by himself, are so reckless and extraordinary, that there can be no relief from solicitude here while an officer so imprudent is acting under your authority.

Had the inhabitants of Rupert's Land, on the breaking out of the disturbances, risen and put an end to them, or had Governor McTavish organized a force to occupy his Forts, and maintain his authority, all would have been well, and Riel and his people would have been responsible for any bloodshed or property destroyed. But Colonel Dennis, with no legal authority, proceeds to seize the Fort, then in possession, not of the insurgents, but of the Hudson's Bay Company, and to garrison it with a mixed force of Whites and Indians, and proposes to give battle to the insurgents, should a junction be formed with some forces which he has ordered to be drilled on the Assiniboine. He appears never to have thought that

the moment war commenced, all the white inhabitants would be at the mercy of the Indians, by whom they are largely outnumbered, and, divided as they would be, might be easily overpowered.

It is impossible to read the Colonel's account of his attempt to persuade Judge Black to aid him in proclaiming martial law, without strong feelings of regret, that you should have been represented, in the settlements, by a person with so little discretion. It is no wonder that Judge Black was "frightened" at the proposal, as he must have known that Colonel Dennis would have to answer, at the bar of justice, for every life lost by such an assumption of authority, and that the illegal seizure of an American citizen, would at once provoke interference in the quarrel, and lead to very serious complications.

I have, &c.,

JOSEPH HOWE.

PEMBINA, December 8th, 1869.

*The Hon. Joseph Howe, Secretary of State,
Ottawa.*

Received by
the Secretary
of State for the
Provinces, 25th
December.

SIR,—I have the honor to inform you that no message or messenger from Fort Garry or from Colonel Dennis, has reached me since my despatch on the 6th inst. A rumor is current here, based on a statement of the mail carrier who only travels half the distance to Fort Garry), that there were 600 men under Colonel Dennis at the Stone Fort, and 300 under Riel at Fort Garry. As some of us received letters by the last mail from the north, I infer that the road, or some part of it, was, up to Sunday at least, under the control of Riel. I did not expect that Colonel Dennis would move from the Lower Fort until the people at the "Portage" had joined him, which could not well have been accomplished before Monday or Tuesday. I am not therefore surprised to find the road still obstructed between this place and Fort Garry.

On Monday last, Mr. Richards, who lodged with a Mr. Rolette, Deputy U.S. Marshal, at Pembina, reported to me that the officials and residents of the village were very much excited, in consequence of a rumour that the Indians were being armed by the Loyalists, and that the aid of the Sioux had been sought by some of the Canadians at Fort Garry. Knowing that the Indians had refused to joined Riel's party, and that the Sioux would like an excuse for attacking them, and knowing also that we were aware of the complicity of some of them in the outbreak, it was natural that they should be alarmed by such a rumour. I had previously heard of their attempts to organize a force for the purpose of attacking us in our "winter quarters," ostensibly for the purpose of "driving us out of the country," but really, I have no doubt, with a murderous intent. I had private information of the designs of two or three desperadoes and outlaws, who have found it convenient to reside in the neighbourhood, and who are concerned in the present movement. They had become aware of Colonel Dennis's occupation of the Stone Fort, and of the determination of the English and Scotch half-breeds to resist Riel's party, and they feared for their own safety. They pretended to believe that I had given orders to employ the Indians, and they threatened immediate reprisals unless I revoked the supposed order. Mr. Richards was much alarmed by these threats, and suggested the immediate return to Fort Abercrombie, of the females and children. While this was humane, I felt it was not politic, and at the moment not a practical suggestion. We had not yet constructed a sufficient number of sleighs for the journey, although they were in process of construction. I therefore determined to go down to the village, and have a conference with the officials, who, I knew, would soon make known the result to those more deeply implicated in the conspiracy. I took Messrs. Richards, Provencher and my son with me, and drove to the Custom House. Mr. Nelson, the Deputy Collector, is a very intelligent and respectable person, and, I have reason to believe, has kept himself aloof from Stuttsman and his co-conspirators. I found some of these in his office evidently much alarmed, and by no means in a friendly mood towards me. I at once explained the object of my visit, and requested that the Postmaster and other official persons in the neighbourhood should be assembled. This was soon done, and I frankly explained their situation and my own as I

understood it. The enclosed letter ("3 A"), which I afterwards addressed to Mr. Nelson, sufficiently details what took place at this interview.

I found on enquiry, the next day, that Mr. Nelson and one or two of his neighbours were reassured by the statements and explanations I had given them, and expressed themselves pleased with my candour and firmness. Stuttsman and Rolette, however, were still talking of taking vengeance. Messrs. Richards, Provencher and Bogg having removed to my house, we established a military *régime*, and prepared to resist an attack from any quarter. We kept watch by day and by night, and had all our arms ready for action. Not having heard from Colonel Dennis since the date of his report, forwarded with my last despatch, I deferred my proposed removal from American Territory, but kept up daily communication with the Hudson Bay Company's Post.

I enclose (paper "3 B") a translated copy of a letter received two or three days since by Mr Provencher, from, as he supposes, the Roman Catholic priest at Scratching River. It is without signature, and is evidently intended to frighten us away. But we feel that our departure for Canada at the present juncture, much to be approved on personal grounds, would be fatal to the retention of the North West as a part of the Dominion, and with that view of the case, we have determined at all hazards, to remain a little longer, in the hope of a peaceful solution of the present difficulty.

The friendly disposition of the Indians of this Territory to us, and their antipathy to the Americans, is the great anchor by which we shall be enabled to hold it. While they are with us, and properly handled, no enemy from the south can ever venture into these great plains. This fact is fully comprehended by the military authorities at Washington, as well as by the Fenians in New York. Great efforts were made by the leaders of the present conspiracy to secure an alliance with the Indians, especially with the bands in the neighbourhood of Red River, before taking the field. Their first step was to persuade them to make demands upon me of such a character that compliance would be impossible, and *thus* create a *casus belli* between the New Government and the Indians at the very outset. With this view they kept Chief Ke-wi-ta-osh, and a part of his band in and about Pembina for some weeks—much longer than they had bargained for—to meet me at the boundary line, and to present these demands. I have already in my report of the 29th November referred to the publication of the Yankton Dakotian of the letter prepared for the Indians by American plotters here, but repudiated by the Indians as soon as they understood its purport. I observe that this letter has appeared in several Canadian Newspapers, and no doubt has attracted the attention of the Privy Council.

The next step was a summons to the chiefs of the large bands to meet Riel and his confederates at Rivière SALE for consultation and treaty, with a view to an armed alliance against us. The chiefs, "Fox" and "GROS OREILLE" obeyed the summons, but though tempted by very large *promises*, they wisely and promptly refused to join or aid the half-breed movement, but intimated to our friends that they would be ready to obey a summons from the authorities.

In these circumstances it was felt to be a wise, as well as a loyal and humane policy to *threaten* the insurgents and their annexation leaders with an Indian as well as a civil war, if they persisted in their rebellious designs. The alarm, real or pretended, of the neutral and respectable people—few though they are—in this settlement, as well as the exasperations and murderous threats of the conspirators themselves, show the power of the engine that they believe has been worked. I believe they have called for troops from the nearest American Post (Fort Abercrombie) to protect them from the dreaded Sioux. I may had that small bands of the Sioux have lately been seen, only three or four days' journey from here. Two Chippewa Indians, and a half-bred boy, who had gone towards Pembina Mountain, on a hunting expedition, were met by six Sioux, who, pretending friendship, suddenly rushed upon the carts of the Chippewas, seized their arms, and fired upon them. One of the Indians fell dead, the boy ran, apparently wounded, while the other escaped unhurt, and running for his life towards this place, came to the Hudson Bay Company's Post nearly exhausted with hunger and cold. They belonged to the Kewitaosh's band, and, I hear, that according to Indian custom, a

war party has started out to recover the carts and the wounded boy, and to avenge the death of one of their warriors. These attacks and reprisals by hunting parties of the two tribes are not uncommon; but the present case shows a degree of boldness on the part of the Sioux, and a propensity to travel north instead of west, which are not pleasant to the imagination of our frontier neighbours. I could not refrain from telling them at our meeting, on Monday evening, when the desperate character of the Sioux was portrayed to me, and I was urged to give immediate orders to the loyal settlers not to accept the help of Indians—that the possible consequences of an Indian war ought to have been thought of by some people in the neighbourhood of Pembina a few weeks ago. The remark was delivered in a serious tone, and with the proper emphasis, and was received in solemn silence. The shot took effect, and seeing they could not frighten me into issuing orders dictated by them, they expressed themselves satisfied with my declaration, as reported in my letter to Mr. Nelson.

I waited for two days and nights after this interview, anxiously expecting a second report from Colonel Dennis, which I hoped would inform me of the dispersion of Riel and his party, or of a joint deputation to me, and an armistice in the mean time. But as none came, and as the story of the employment of the Indians might, though untrue, except as to Prince's band, grow into truth, by its own circulation, I thought it well to address a letter ("3 C.") to Colonel Dennis on the subject, and entrusted it to the mail, under cover of Mr. Nelson's envelope. I instructed the messenger to allow Mr. Nelson to read it before he sealed the letter, in order to convince him of my desire to avoid, as long as possible, an appeal to the Indians.

I received a note from General Hunt, who commands at Fort Abercrombie, informing me that he could not find storage for my goods in the fort, but he was informed that Mr. McCauley, a merchant there, would store them and apply to him for protection, if (which he did not think likely), any one attempted to molest them. I have also heard from the person sent to remove the arms, &c., from Georgetown, of their safe arrival at Fort Abercrombie.

THURSDAY, 9th.

I have just heard as I was closing this dispatch, that two messengers from the Settlement have been intercepted near this, and their papers taken from them, by Stuttsman and Company, or half-breeds employed by them; I am taking measures to make this operation unavailing for the future.

I have, &c.,

WM. McDOUGALE.

(3 A.)

HUDSON BAY COMPANY'S POST, PEMBINA,

8th December, 1869.

*N. E. Nelson, Esq., Deputy Collector of Customs,
Pembina.*

DEAR SIR,—I think it my duty to you as well as to myself, to put in writing, though not formally or officially, the principal point of our conversation on Monday evening last. Serious events and complications may possibly arise out of the disturbances which unfortunately still prevail at the Red River Settlement.

Exaggerated, and I fear, in some cases, wilfully false statements as to the extent, origin, aim and tendency of these disturbances, have been spread far and wide through the American Press, on the alleged authority of persons living in this vicinity. I have some apprehension that the interview of last Monday evening, and the statements made and views expressed on both sides may be misrepresented through the same channels, and therefore, I take the precaution, while the matter is fresh in our minds, to set down the material points of our conversation.

Mr. Richards having reported to me that you had expressed great apprehensions

that an Indian war and consequent danger to the lives and property of American citizens in this Territory would grow out of the efforts of the Magistrates and loyal people of Red River Settlement to disperse the armed half-breeds under Riel, and that you seem to think I might by some exercise of authority prevent or lessen the danger of these consequences, I thought it only due to you as the principal officer of the American Government at this Post, to confer immediately with you. Living for the moment under the protection of American law, I could not be indifferent to the wishes of one of its most efficient, honorable, and obliging administrators.

I proceeded to your office about 5 o'clock p.m. (of the 6th inst.), and explaining why I had come, requested the presence of the other officials of the place. Mr. Cavelier, the Postmaster, J. Rolette, one of your officers; J. Rolette, his father, who I understand is or acts as Deputy Marshall; Mr. Harrison, Justice of the Peace; Mr. Lemay, Ex-Collector, and three or four other residents of the village were present. Mr. Richards, Mr. Provencher and my son were present with me.

After you had finished writing a letter, on which you were engaged when I entered your office, I directed my remarks to you, and stated that Mr. Richards having reported to me your apprehensions, as already mentioned, I wished to explain the *legal* position of affairs in the North-West Territories. I stated that on the 1st December, the powers of Government passed from the Hudson's Bay Company and its officers, to the representative of Her Majesty the Queen, appointed by the Governor General of the Dominion. That was the result of various Acts of Parliament and the proceedings lawfully had under them,—that I had been commissioned and empowered to represent the Crown as Lieutenant Governor, but while on my way to Fort Garry, before the transfer had taken place, I was met and ordered away from the Territory by a body of armed men, acting without, and as I subsequently learned, in defiance of authority; that I had remained on American soil, under protection of American law up to the present time; that the Proclamations announcing the change in the Government and notifying public officers, &c., of the fact were executed at the Hudson's Bay Post, on British soil, and that I had not done and did not intend to do any official Act except when in my own jurisdiction. That the movements of the loyal people of the Territory against the rioters under Riel were in a great degree spontaneous and under the direction of local authorities "Conservators of the Peace" exercising only civil power. I stated that, in every civilized community the Magistrate and Peace Officer, has power to raise the *posse comitatus* or whatever force he needs, to put down mobs and riots, acting in breach of the public peace, and that so far as I knew, or had sanctioned, this was the only "war" now going on. That I had not authorized the employment of Indians, and except in the last resort, did not intend to do so; that I had received messages from several chiefs, expressing disapproval of the conduct of the French half-breeds under Riel, and offering their services in the cause of law and order; that I had sent verbal and brief replies, thanking them for their good will, evading the offer of service, and putting off the questions they wished to consult me about until my arrival at Fort Garry; and that to be frank and explicit, having seen what I had in the press, and having heard of various expressions and actions by persons who I knew were listening to me, I must give it as my deliberate judgment, that those *white* persons on both sides of the line, who had advised, countenanced, and aided the lawless outbreaks of the French half-breeds and had rejoiced at their success in keeping out of the Territory, the representative of authority and law and the only power which the Indians would be likely to obey or respect, will be held responsible before God and man for any destruction of life or property that may result.

You stated that you had given no countenance to the half-breed movement—had expressed no opinion one way or the other, but had performed the duties of your office with strict impartiality—that you deprecated the putting of arms in the hands of Indians or raising them in any civil contest, and were much concerned when you heard that they were being employed by the authorities in the settlement, and you questioned whether, if I had authorised it, I had not violated the laws of neutrality. That you were glad to hear me say I had not done so, and hoped I would exert my authority to prevent it.

I at once acknowledged your fair and honorable conduct, and my belief that you had neither said nor done anything to provoke or encourage the lawless proceedings of the half-breeds, but I said, I feared there were others, on the American side of the line, of whom the same thing could not be said. That as to using my authority to restore order and restrain the dangerous elements of the country, that was the very thing I was trying to do, but as I had no sufficient force at my command to overcome the armed men who had barricaded the road, I was unable to use my authority in the most effective way, and the local magistrates and officers were therefore left to their own judgment as to the use of means, and it would be very unreasonable to hold me responsible for their acts until I had an opportunity of controlling or preventing them.

Mr. *Cavelier*, Postmaster, asked me if I did not know that Dr. Schultz had sent one "Sherman" with goods of a certain kind, to the Sioux in the vicinity of Turtle Mountain, and that the purpose was to use them against Riel's party. I said I had not heard of any such thing; and, moreover, did not believe it. I thought Dr. Schultz too sensible a man—believed he had too much at stake to incur any risk so dangerous. Mr. *Cavelier* said, he *knew* the statement was true, and in reference to my remark as to Dr. Schultz's position, said he was a reckless and selfish man, whose doctrine was that "you could trust no one as a friend, except so far as interest moved him," &c., &c.,—that "Sherman was an outlaw, dared not come into American Territory, and would be hanged if he did. That the Sioux referred to were not yet reconciled to the Government, and would not hesitate to murder American citizens, if they were encouraged by such a man as Sherman to do so," &c., &c.

Mr. Lemay remarked with much emphasis, that if the Indians took part in the war, as he called it, my life would not be safe for five minutes. Mr. Harrison added, that in such an event, I and my party would find ourselves in the *hottest* place we had ever been in, &c. Mr. Lemay wanted an explicit answer to his question, whether *in any case* I would countenance or authorize the use of Indians. I declined to make any statement of what I would or would not do, when I assumed the functions of my office, but that I *had not* authorized and did not wish to employ even half breeds in warlike operations. That I was a good deal startled by the statement of Mr. *Cavelier*, in regard to the Sioux at Turtle Mountain, and I enquired whether they lived in American or British Territory. Mr. *Cavelier* said, they were sometimes on one side and sometimes on the other side, but were known to be hostile to Americans. After some further general remarks I concluded my interview by observing that in view of the dangerous position we were all in, I thought the best thing we could do was to restore order and authority at Red River Settlement as soon as possible, and I believed the persons were then in the room or immediate neighborhood who could do it, and that at all events, that was my duty and mission, and to the best of my power and ability I intended to execute. To Mr. Lemay's and Mr. Harrison's remarks,—some will call it a threat—that if Indians, whom I have never seen, and am in no way responsible for, should go to war, my life would not last five minutes, I replied that such an observation or possibility would not affect my *action* or course in the least. I had accepted an important office, knowing well its perils, but I meant to do my duty regardless of all personal considerations. I was but one man, and after me would come another, and perhaps one better skilled in the operations of war. I had come to cultivate the arts of peace, to establish telegraph lines, build roads and encourage emigration, and organize a civilized community. But those who thought it would serve their purpose better to stir up disorder and riot among the French half-breeds, next to the Indian the most dangerous element in the country, must not imagine that they can transfer to me the responsibility of a conflagration which they have fanned if they have not kindled.

The above is the substance of what was said in your office in the presence of the principal inhabitants of the village, and which I desire to remain of record in your hands.

Since my conversation with you, I have heard some statements, which I deem it proper to mention in connection with the foregoing. I am told that a person to whom I

entrusted copies of a Proclamation, continuing and confirming the authority of all Peace and other officers, was arrested on British Territory by two American citizens living in this vicinity, and that these papers were taken from him without law or authority, and in violation of their duty as persons under a temporary allegiance to the Sovereign of the country in which they were travelling. If this outrage has been committed, as reported to me, by those in whose behalf I am asked to exercise my authority over the Indians, I ask you, sir, how am I to get my orders obeyed if they are not allowed to reach those to whom they are addressed? I can assure you that the persons who have sought to confer with me from the settlement, official as well as unofficial, have experienced little difficulty and felt no serious apprehension of obstruction or danger till they approached the American border, and their fears were, not that they would be interrupted on their peaceful and lawful visits by Indians or half-breeds, but by *white* men, one of whom at least, is an official under your direction.

It is in evidence before me, that the person alluded to has been endeavouring to incite the half-breeds and others hereabouts, "to drive me and my party out of the country." I can hardly suppose that these are done, and threats made, by the son of a Deputy Marshall, and an employé of the Customs Department of the United States, without the knowledge and approval of some one higher in authority. Do not suppose for a moment that I imagine *you* have countenanced or will countenance the acts or threats of your subordinate, but it is well you should ask now what has been communicated to me respecting him.

I send you the enclosed letter addressed to Colonel Dennis in the hope that you may find some means of forwarding it safely. Perhaps you can address it under cover to some one at Fort Garry who will be able to place it in his hands. You will see by the contents, which I have left for your (private) perusal, that *my* wishes and orders are against the employment of Indians in the present crisis. I shall send a duplicate of the order by the first opportunity, but as my letters have been so often tampered with, I cannot trust the regular post. A letter [addressed by you, and to an unsuspected correspondent might reach its destination more speedily and safely.

In conclusion, let me add that in the event of a "raid" upon this settlement by the Sioux Indians, you and any other American citizens placing yourselves under my protection may rely upon it, that all the influence and authority of my office, and all the means of defence at my command, will be put forth in your behalf. If that office and authority are as potent with the Indians on the British side of the line as some of the gentlemen present at our interview admitted them to be, the threatened danger will be averted.

Believe me, &c.,

WM. McDUGALL.

(3 B)

When Mr. McDougall arrived here a month ago there were some five hundred men under arms; if he had then left, the difficulties could have been settled quite easily; now the whole population is on a war footing and a serious character of opposition is getting deeper and deeper in the minds, as long as Mr. McDougall is giving the Insurgents more trouble. Every attempt at coercion made by Canada, or even by England, will result in the loss of all advantages that you could draw from this country. The half-breeds will take again the road of the prairie, and from there they will prevent any improvement than can be attempted or tried—telegraphs, railroads, settlements—war can be made against them, but the armies will never meet them. There will be thousands who will be elsewhere and nowhere. If the people were left quiet they would soon be ready to listen to propositions that could be made to them by the Canadian Government. But the longer Mr. McDougall will attempt to come in by measures of violence the more difficult it will be. For himself, if he comes into the Territory, he will be shot immediately. His principal friends and supporters here are on the eve of being *massacred*.

(3 C.)

NEAR PEMBINA, December 8th, 1869.

To Lieut-Col. J. S. Dennis, Red River Settlement.

MY DEAR COLONEL,—I commit to the post, under cover to a third party, this letter, which I trust you will receive and act upon without delay. It has been represented to me that the authorities who are endeavouring to quell the outbreak of the French half-breeds have contemplated the employment of Indians for that purpose, and that a band of Sioux on the Assiniboine are drilling with a view to military or warlike service of some kind. I desire and direct you to prevent, so far as you can, any project of this kind. If Indians are sent upon the war path by any person acting with authority, it may be found very difficult for the same, or even a higher authority, to recall them or to restrain them within the limits allowed to forces acting in aid of the civil power. It is said also that goods "of a certain kind," by which I understand ammunition and arms have been sent from the settlement to the Sioux near Turtle Mountain, with an invitation to them to aid in the suppression of the half-breed disturbance. I can hardly believe this story, but I hope you will enquire into it and take immediate steps to counteract any movement of the kind. The American residents here are very much disgusted at the prospect of a visit from the Sioux, and it would indeed be deplorable if they should be drawn into a contest that might give them a pretext to re-enact the scenes of 1862.

With regard to the Indians of the Mission, under the chief, "Prince," a few of whom I understand, are employed to guard the Stone Fort, I will be glad to hear that their services in that capacity are dispensed with. They may be intelligent and subject to control, but the fact of their employment will soon reach the ears, and possibly excite the war-spirit of more distant bands, who may not be so easily restrained.

Extreme necessity in a time of riot and anarchy, will justify extreme measures; but I hope the loyal inhabitants who have risen in defence of law and order, will be able to accomplish their object without the active aid of their Indian allies.

I trust to your discretion in the meantime; but hope soon to be nearer the scene of action, and in a position to judge and command.

I am, &c.,

WM. MCDUGALL.

PEMBINA, Monday, 13th December, 1869.

*To the Hon. Joseph Howe, Secretary of State, &c.,
Ottawa, Canada.*

Received by the Secretary of State for the Provinces, 30th December. SIR,—I have the honor to acquaint you that I have received no communication from you since your despatch of the 19th ultimo. Two letters, marked "private," from Sir John A. Macdonald, under date of the 23rd November, came to hand safely on the evening of the 11th inst. I have received newspapers from Ottawa and Montreal, of 27th and 29th respectively; and from more western cities of a date one or two days later. If the mails are not delayed on the way, they will arrive here from Ottawa in about fourteen days.

I regret to state that the insurgents under Riel have developed more strength and determination of purpose in their rebellious movement than the reports from Fort Garry of every kind had led me to believe they possessed. They have been able with the help of their allies on the American side of the line, to intercept and prevent all communications from Col. Dennis to me since his report of the 2nd inst. I have, therefore, had to trust to the statement of the *enemy*; and such flying rumours as we could gather from friendly half-breeds for the occurrences and movements at Fort Garry and the Stone Fort since the 2nd inst. From these various sources of information

I learn that on the 5th or 6th instant, a number of persons (the report says 40 or 50) were assembled in the house of Dr. Schultz as a guard, or as a portion of the *posse comitatus*, about to join the force under Colonel Dennis, when, they were suddenly surprised by a party of Riel's men, and made prisoners. It does not appear that any resistance was made by the Schultz party, whether from the suddenness of the attack, or their unwillingness to be first to shed blood, I cannot learn. It is said they were armed, and had in the house 400 rounds of ammunition. The prisoners were marched to the Fort, and detained there, but have been allowed to supply themselves with provisions from the village. The number of the insurgents now under Riel's orders is said to be 400 or 500—as large a body as his friends have at any time claimed for him. If this story should be confirmed, it would indicate great confidence in Riel and his plans, by the bulk of the French, and the continued support of the *clergy*, and the American and other traders in the settlement who are known to have advised and assisted him in the earlier stages of the movement. The same report tell us that this sudden display of force by Riel has discouraged the Canadians and their friends, and that the English and Scotch half-breeds have refused, in any number, to join the party of “law and order.” This representation of the state of affairs receives some confirmation from the fact that Riel was able to send a force of 20 men to the Hudson's Bay Post here, who, since Friday last, have held it, and prevented any of our party from going there. The Americans in our vicinity, concerned in the movement, are less excited since the arrival of this force, and talk of our being obliged to remove, in a few days, towards Canada. Hearing that Mr. James McKay, a wealthy and influential resident on the Assiniboine, and one of those whom Colonel Dennis was to consult before taking any decisive measures, had reached the house of Mr. Dease, about 26 miles up the Pembina River, on the American side of the line, I sent my son, on the 11th instant, with a verbal message to him, and in the hope that he would be able to give me reliable information of the operations of Colonel Dennis, since I have heard from him, and also whether the story of the arrest at the house of Dr. Schultz was true. The road to the place where Mr. McKay was staying, runs, in some places on British Territory, and the people here (except Mr. Nelson), being all openly leagued with the insurgents, and keeping guard at night at the bridge over the Pembina River, to prevent any messenger from reaching me, I was apprehensive that my son would be intercepted, and, therefore, directed him to bring no letters or written communication, unless Mr. McKay assented. He succeeded in finding Mr. McKay, and getting his version of affairs in the settlement down to the 5th instant. I enclose his report to me (“4 A.”).

On reference to Colonel Dennis's report, forwarded with my despatch of the 6th instant (“2 A.”) it will be seen that he saw Mr. McKay before taking possession of the Stone Fort, and found him of opinion that the time had come for some kind of opposition to the French, but afraid that people “of large property,” like himself, would suffer injury. I am disposed to think he ran away as much on account of the danger to his person as to his property. But his case illustrates the position and feeling of many others who have no sympathy with the French half-breeds, and no objection to the new Government. They will accept the latter if some one else will do the fighting, and pay all the money necessary to establish it.

Major Wallace, who is staying with Peter Hayden, not far from the Hudson Bay Post, reported to me, last night, that Riel was expected to arrive there during the night. I thought, in view of all the facts as they now present themselves, and especially the fact that the communication has been effectually cut off with Colonel Dennis, that I would be justified in opening communication with Riel, if he appeared in this neighbourhood. I accordingly wrote the letter enclosed (4 B), and sent it to the captain of the party in possession of the Hudson Bay Post. It reached him this morning; but, up to the present time (5 p.m.), I have not heard of Riel's arrival, nor whether they have sent the letter forward to him.

Dr. Jackes, who belongs to our party, was sent for, in great haste, this morning by

Mr. Rolette, Deputy U. S. Marshall, and one of our most bitter opponents here, for his professional aid. Rolette's wife was dying (in child-birth). The Indian midwife had given her up, and her relatives, some of whom had been threatening our lives, were now applying to us to save the life of Mrs. Rolette. The Doctor hurried to her bedside, and by the exercise of his skill, overcame the difficulty, and probably has saved her life. They all professed to be full of gratitude, and when the danger was over, showed him a proclamation, issued by Riel since the 1st December, in which he announces that the French have established a government of their own, and intend to resist, by force, if necessary, the attempt of any other powers to impose one upon them. It denies the right of the Hudson Bay Company to transfer them to Canada, &c., &c. The Doctor could not obtain a copy, as Rolette had only one, and would not part with it.

I beg again to express my opinion that the suggestion I had the honor to make in my despatch of 29th November, and more fully in previous letters to Sir John A. Macdonald, is the only practicable plan for establishing the authority of the Dominion Government in this territory.

I have, &c.,

WM. McDUGALL.

(4. A.)

PEMBINA, December 13th, 1869.

MEMO.—Left Pembina on the morning of 11th December for St. Joe, 26 miles distant for the residence of * * a half-breed, born in Oregon, and a man of considerable wealth and influence amongst the half-breeds at St. Joe. He informed me that Mr. Gingras, of St. Joe, had on the evening of the 10th inst, tried to get the half-breeds there to join the Red River insurgent party. He (Gingras) had agreed to raise a party of 130 half-breeds and with a portion of them to drive Governor McDougall away from his house at Pembina. * * * treated the proposal with contempt, and tried to persuade Gingras not to attempt such a movement. These half-breeds at St. Joe are principally connected with those at Red River Settlement, and many of them were inclined to fall in with Mr. Gingras's plan. Mr. Dease believed that if there was any bloodshed at Red River Settlement, the Governor and his whole party would be in imminent danger and run the risk of losing their lives, Mr. Dease sympathized much with the Governor and his party and declared his willingness to assist us in any way in his power, I ascertained from him that Mr. McKay from Red River Settlement was at a Mr. Charles Grant's, about 7 miles distant from Mr. Dease's, I drove there to see him, and found he had brought his family and had left the settlement with the intention of remaining amongst his relatives at St. Joe, during the present troubles. He informed me that fifty Canadians who were guarding Government provisions at the residence of Dr. Schultz, at Fort Garry, were taken prisoners, that Dr. Schultz and wife, Dr. Brown, Mr. Mair and Mr. Hallet, were amongst them. Mr. Hallet was taken prisoner while endeavouring to procure some medicine for his wife. Mr. McKay also informed me that Colonel Dennis, on his arrival from Pembina, first called on him, and that he (McKay) advised him strongly not to incite the one portion of the population to take up arms against the other, and that one hundred of the principal French half-breeds had signed a document agreeing to allow the Governor to come in. He also stated that if hostilities were commenced and blood spilt, the lives of the Governor and his party would almost certainly be sacrificed. He said that other men of property and wealth in the Settlement, held the same views, and expressed the same opinions similar to his own. Mr. McKay intended to have called on the Governor at Pembina, but was overtaken on his way by a party of insurgents going to take possession of the Hudson's Bay Company's Post at Pembina, and was forced to change his course and cross the prairie, to St. Joe. He was under the

impression that Col. Dennis had gone to Portage La Prairie, and that Stone Fort was still held by the Indians and others under Colonel Dennis.

WM. B. McDOUGALL.

(PRIVATE)

("4 B,"

PEMBINA, December 13th, 1869.

Louis Riel, Esq.

SIR,—I hear from the Hudson Bay Post that you are expected to arrive there from Fort Garry to-night. I send this note to inform you that I am anxious to have a conversation with you, before answering despatches which I have recently received from the Dominion Government.

I have not yet had any communication from you or from any one else, on behalf of the French half-breeds who have prevented me from proceeding to Fort Garry, stating their complaints or wishes in reference to the New Government. As the representative of the Sovereign to whom you and they owe, and as I am told, do not wish to deny allegiance, it is proper that some such communication should reach me. It will be a great misfortune to us all, I think, if I am obliged to return to Canada, and hand over the powers of Government here to a military ruler.

This will be the inevitable result unless we find some solution of the present difficulty very soon.

I have full powers from the Government, as well as the strongest desire personally to meet all just claims of every class and section of the people. Why should you not come to me and discuss the matter?

I beg you to believe that what occurred will not affect my mind against you or those for whom you may be authorised to speak.

The interview proposed must be without the knowledge or privity of certain American citizens here who pretend to be *en rapport* with you.

I trust to your honour on this point.

Very faithfully yours,

WILLIAM McDOUGALL.

PEMBINA, 16th December, 1869.

To the Honorable Joseph Howe, Secretary of State, &c.,
Ottawa.

Received by
the Secretary
of State for the
Province, 1st
January, 1870.

SIR,—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your despatch of the 29th November. Events have occurred since that despatch was written, which when the account of them reaches you, will justify I think, the decision I have arrived at, to return as far as St. Paul and communicate with you from that point.

The state of affairs at, and near Fort Garry, which was described in my last despatch (13 December,) on the information of persons not much to be depended upon, is now substantially confirmed by the arrival, last night, and report of Colonel Dennis. He left the Stone Fort on Saturday morning at 2 o'clock having ordered the payment and discharge at noon, of that day, of the persons who had volunteered to hold and defend it.

I enclose two short reports ("5 A," and "5 B,") which were, with other papers, safely brought to me by two of chief "Prince's" messengers two nights ago. I was on the look out for the Colonel himself, sooner than he promised, because I was satisfied his attempt to arrange a deputation to me from the leaders of the Riel party would fail. I detained the Indians as recommended, secreting them from observation as much as possible, and have found them of very great service. As I intend to start on my return journey to-morrow, I shall defer until I arrive at Fort Abercrombie, the communication of further details, which might if known here, interfere with our future operations.

I enclose a letter ("5 C") from one who knows well the character and habits of the half-breeds of both origins. He has acted as guide to several expeditions into the interior, and was my guide from St. Cloud to this place.

As soon as I had decided to quit this neighborhood, I thought it prudent, in view of future possible questions and responsibilities, to write the enclosed letter to Mr. McTavish ("5 D"), which I have committed to the custody of my faithful Indians, who will find the means to put it in proper hands.

We are still closely watched, and prevented from obtaining supplies from the Hudson Bay Company's Post. I have heard nothing in answer to my private letter to Mr. Riel, and have no reason to believe that he will soon come near me.

I enclose ("5 E"), a copy of the Declaration of Independence, which was adopted on the 24th November, and printed on the 8th instant. Also, a "List of Rights," ("5 F"), which was distributed two or three days before the "Declaration," and produced a cooling effect upon many of those who had professed, a day or two before, a willingness to put down the Riel party by force of arms. As soon as it had served its purpose, the "Declaration" was issued, and the English found themselves caught in a trap. In the meantime, parties had been sent to all the important points, and the arms of the English-speaking settlers were taken from them.

None of the messengers mentioned in your dispatch have yet arrived.

I have, &c.,

WM. McDougall.

P.S. Please find enclosed (5 G) copy of notice issued by Colonel Dennis, at Stone Fort.

WM. M. D.

[5 A.]

STONE FORT, RED RIVER SETTLEMENT,

N. W. T., December 9th, 1869.

The Honorable Wm. McDougall, C.B., Lieutenant Governor, &c., &c., &c.

SIR,—I beg to report my proceedings, under the commission which I had the honor to receive from you on the 1st instant, and would refer you to the accompanying record thereof, in which full details are given.

It is a matter of sincere regret to me, to be obliged to express the opinion deliberately given, that as a body, the English-speaking portion of the Red River Settlement proper, in their present frame of mind, cannot be counted on in any measures of an aggressive character which may be necessary to put down the French party, now in arms against the Government.

I shall remain here a few days longer to be at hand, should there be any prospect of arranging with the French to send a delegation to you, of which, however, I have little expectation, and on finding that no further object is to be gained by my remaining, will return to Pembina.

I have, &c.,

J. S. DENNIS.

(5 B.)

9th December, 1869.

Honorable Wm. McDougall, C.B., Lieutenant Governor.

MY DEAR MR. McDougall,—I expect to learn this evening, yet finally, whether there is any chance of the rebel party showing any disposition to send you a delegation.

If satisfied that there is none—that they have gone in fully for their new Government as an independent people—then I shall at once discharge the guard from this Fort and leave for Pembina. This will be taken by chief "Prince's" messenger,

and he had better remain with his friends the Indians below Fort Pembina for a few days till I get down, so that any letters or instructions may be carried back here, for the guidance of the Canadians in the settlement.

I shall be with you in a week, even supposing I delay to have an interview with the Rebel Council, as I should leave immediately after. Let this messenger wait, therefore, for a week at Pembina. You may rely upon it, these people are fully in possession for the winter, and say themselves, that with the promises they have of Fenian and filibuster's support, they will be able to hold the country.

I should not be surprised, but they may get many people here to join them too. I think they would do anything, many of them, rather than offend the French now (as they say) they see "list of rights" that the French ask nothing very unreasonable.

There is nothing for it but to submit on our part till the spring.

Believe me, &c.,

J. S. DENNIS.

(" 5 C.")

RED RIVER, December 8th, 1869.

His Excellency, Honorable Wm. McDougall, Pembina.

Your Excellency will no doubt learn from other sources the state and feelings of the English-speaking population of this settlement just now. I should have written before this time, but I postponed the matter, as I at one time was made to believe that I should see you personally, but as matters stand at present I am extremely sorry to inform your Excellency that I fear my prospects are hopeless. Since the past two days the people, I fear, have made a dead stop in taking any steps whatever. What their objects are I can't say at present. I tried my best to get a force formidable enough to assist in carrying out Colonel Dennis's orders, but I fear the whole scheme will be a failure. Even among our English-speaking population we have to contend with worse characters than the French half-breeds, which I am sorry to inform you, but nevertheless too true. The Scotch settlement won't join us or any other parish of the Protestant population, so that it would be the height of folly for us to take any aggressive steps, for we would be overpowered by numbers. We have in these two parishes all the disadvantages both in numbers and arms. I think it is on no other foundation the people stand for standing back, is want of arms—as a matter of course the half-breeds have taken possession of all our arms. However, if the people were willing they could muster arms enough to put down the half-breeds, but they won't do it. The fact of the matter is they are cowards one and all of them. Although they are my countrymen, I must speak the truth about them.

Colonel Dennis is writing you, and Your Excellency will learn from him the present political state of affairs. I was sorry to hear of the accident to your son, but I hope he is better, and not suffering now.

Will your Excellency allow me to remain, yours,

* * * * *

[5 D.]

PEMBINA, 16th December, 1869.

William McTavish, Esq., Fort Garry.

DEAR SIR,—I consequence of the continued occupation of Fort Garry by the insurgents, under Mr. Louis Riel, and the submission of the local authorities to his orders, and having no force at my command to re-establish the supremacy of the law in that neighborhood, I have determined to return as far as St. Paul, and await there the order of Her Majesty's Imperial and Canadian Governments.

I have not had the honor to receive from you any message or communication since your private note of the 19th of November. The roads at this point have been so effectually watched, and guarded by the insurgents, that I have not ventured to send to

you any official or other communication, that could, if it fell into their hands, betray the situation or give information or encouragement to them. I send this by the Indians whom I have found loyal and faithful, where so many others have proved the reverse; I have little doubt it will reach you safely.

I am advised by the Secretary of State for the Provinces, that His Excellency the Governor General has communicated to Lord Granville my Despatches up to the 9th November, and has also telegraphed the more recent events, including, I presume, the occupation of Fort Garry by the half breeds under Riel. I observe, by a paragraph in the *Montreal Gazette*, that the Dominion Government have telegraphed their agent in London, to withhold payment to the Hudson's Bay Company of the purchase money agreed to be paid to them for the transfer of their rights in Rupert's Land. I have no official confirmation of this statement, but will not be surprised if it should prove true.

Under these circumstances, it becomes important to consider carefully the legal position of all parties in the present crisis. I venture to submit my view of the case as it stands in the North-West Territories.

If, in consequence of the action of the Dominion Government, the surrender and transfer of the Country did not take place on the first day of December, as previously agreed upon, then you are the Chief Executive Officer as before, and responsible for the preservation of the Peace and the enforcement of the Law.

If, on the other hand, the Transfer *did* take place on the first day of December, then I take it, my Commission came into force, and the notice, in the form of a Proclamation, issued by my authority on that day, correctly recited the facts, and disclosed the legal *status* of the respective parties. I learn, from Col. Dennis, that a notice or Proclamation, issued by me on the second day of December, confirming and continuing all public officers in their duties and functions, excepting (in the words of the Canadian Act) "the Public Officer or Functionary at the Head of the Administration of Affairs" was duly printed and published in the Settlement, although it was reported here that the messenger who carried it forward was arrested, and his papers taken from him, by Riel's party. You will observe, by reference to the 5th Section of the Rupert's Land Act, that until otherwise enacted by the Parliament of Canada, "all the Powers, Authorities, and Jurisdiction of the several Courts of Justice, now established in Rupert's Land, and the several Officers thereof, and of all Magistrates and Justices," are continued in full force, and by the 6th Section of "the Canadian Act, for the Temporary Government of Rupert's Land," &c., "all Public Officers and Functionaries holding office in Rupert's Land and the North-West Territory," (with the exception already mentioned) "shall continue to be Public Officers and Functionaries of the North-West Territories, *with the same duties and powers* as before," until otherwise ordered by the Lieutenant Governor.

My Proclamation of the 2nd instant, intended to notify all these officers that I had not "otherwise ordered, and that, by force of both Acts, they still held, and were bound to exercise their "powers, jurisdiction," and "duties," as before. Whether the transfer has been delayed or not, I think it is clear that the present "magistrates" and authorities are still legally in office, and bound, as far as they can, to perform the duties of their respective offices, as before. In your case, the continuance of your powers and jurisdiction as governor, depends upon the transfer. If, as I am inclined to think has happened, the Company surrendered, and Her Majesty transferred on the 1st day of December, notwithstanding the events occurring on this side of the Atlantic, the gentleman who acted as Deputy Governor, or would have assumed that office, under the laws of Assiniboine, prior to December 1st, will, in my absence, and without special deputation by me, be and become the chief executive officer of the Territories.

I have thought it my duty to explain to you, as I understand it, the legal position of affairs within the Territory at the present time. I do not know whether Judge Black will concur with me, but I trust you will show him this letter, and be guided, as I have no doubt you will, very much by his view.

I notice that Riel, in his printed papers, speaks for a very large part of the earth's surface, as well as for all the people who now inhabit it. You will, no doubt, agree with

me, that he rules only the "territory" within the range of his guns, and such "people" as take service in his ranks, or willingly submit to his orders.

I am, &c.,
WILLIAM McDOUGALL.

(5 E.)

DECLARATION OF THE PEOPLE OF RUPERT'S LAND AND THE NORTH-WEST.

Whereas, it is admitted by all men, as a fundamental principle, that the public authority commands the obedience and respect of its subjects. It is also admitted, that a people, when it has no Government, is free to adopt one form of Government, in preference to another, to give or to refuse allegiance to that which is proposed. In accordance with the above first principle, the people of this country had obeyed and respected the authority to which the circumstances surrounded its infancy compelled it to be subject.

A company of adventurers known as the "Hudson Bay Company," and invested with certain powers, granted by His Majesty (Charles II), established itself in Rupert's Land, and in the North-West Territory, for trading purposes only. This company, consisting of many persons, required a certain constitution. But as there was a question of commerce only, their constitution was framed in reference thereto. Yet, since there was at that time no Government to see to the interests of a people already existing in the country, it became necessary for judicial affairs to have recourse to the officers of the Hudson Bay Company. This inaugurated that species of government which, slightly modified by subsequent circumstances, ruled this country up to a recent date.

Whereas, that Government, thus accepted, was far from answering to the wants of the people, and became more and more so, as the population increased in numbers, and as the country was developed, and commerce extended, until the present day, when it commands a place amongst the colonies; and this people, ever actuated by the above-mentioned principles, had generously supported the aforesaid Government, and gave to it a faithful allegiance, when, contrary to the law of nations, in March, 1869, that said Government surrendered and transferred to Canada all the rights which it had, or pretended to have, in this Territory, by transactions with which the people were considered unworthy to be made acquainted.

And, whereas, it is also generally admitted that a people is at liberty to establish any form of government it may consider suited to its wants, as soon as the power to which it was subject abandons it, or attempts to subjugate it, without its consent to a foreign power; and maintain, that no right can be transferred to such foreign power. Now, therefore, first, we, the representatives of the people, in Council assembled in Upper Fort Garry, on the 24th day of November, 1869, after having invoked the God of Nations, relying on these fundamental moral principles, solemnly declare, in the name of our constituents, and in our own names, before God and man, that, from the day on which the Government we had always respected abandoned us, by transferring to a strange power the sacred authority confided to it, the people of Rupert's Land and the North-West became free and exempt from all allegiance to the said Government. Second. That we refuse to recognize the authority of Canada, which pretends to have a right to coerce us, and impose upon us a despotic form of government still more contrary to our rights and interests as British subjects, than was that Government to which we had subjected ourselves, through necessity, up to a recent date. Thirdly. That, by sending an expedition on the 1st of November, ult., charged to drive back Mr. William McDougall and his companions, coming in the name of Canada, to rule us with the rod of despotism, without previous notification to that effect, we have acted conformably to that sacred right which commands every citizen to offer energetic opposition to prevent this country from being enslaved. Fourth. That we continue, and shall continue, to oppose, with all our strength, the establishing of the Canadian authority in our country, under the announced form; and, in case of persistence on the part of the Canadian Government to enforce its obnoxious

policy upon us by force of arms, we protest beforehand against such an unjust and unlawful course; and we declare the said Canadian Government responsible, before God and men, for the innumerable evils which may be caused by so unwarrantable a course. Be it known, therefore, to the world in general, and to the Canadian Government in particular, that, as we have always heretofore successfully defended our country in frequent wars with the neighbouring tribes of Indians, who are now on friendly relations with us, we are firmly resolved in future, not less than in the past, to repel all invasions from whatsoever quarter they may come; and, furthermore, we do declare and proclaim, in the name of the people of Rupert's Land and the North-West, that we have, on the said 24th day of November, 1869, above mentioned, established a Provisional Government, and hold it to be the only and lawful authority now in existence in Rupert's Land and the North-West which claims the obedience and respect of the people; that, meanwhile, we hold ourselves in readiness to enter in such negotiations with the Canadian Government as may be favourable for the good government and prosperity of this people. In support of this declaration, relying on the protection of Divine Providence, we mutually pledge ourselves, on oath, our lives, our fortunes, and our sacred honor, to each other.

Issued at Fort Garry, this Eighth day of December, in the year of our Lord One thousand eight hundred and sixty-nine.

JOHN BRUCE, Pres.
LOUIS RIEL, Sec.

(5 F.)

LIST OF RIGHTS.

1. That the people have the right to elect their own Legislature.
2. That the Legislature have the power to pass all laws local to the Territory over the veto of the Executive by a two-thirds vote.
3. That no Act of the Dominion Parliament (local to the Territory) be binding on the people until sanctioned by the Legislature of the Territory.
4. That all Sheriffs, Magistrates, Constables, School Commissioners, &c., be elected by the people.
5. A free homestead and pre-emption land law.
6. That a portion of the public lands be appropriated to the benefit of schools, the building of bridges, roads, and public buildings.
7. That it be guaranteed to connect Winnipeg by rail with the nearest line of railroad, within a term of five years; the land grant to be subject to the Local Legislature.
8. That, for the term of four years, all military, civil, and municipal expenses be paid out of the Dominion funds.
9. That the military be composed of the inhabitants now existing in the Territory.
10. That the English and French languages be common in the Legislature and Courts, and that all public documents and Acts of the Legislature be published in both languages.
11. That the Judge of the Supreme Court speak the English and French languages.
12. That treaties be concluded and ratified between the Dominion Government and the several tribes of Indians in the Territory, to ensure peace on the frontier.
13. That we have a fair and full representation in the Canadian Parliament.
14. That all privileges, customs, and usages existing at the time of the transfer, be respected.

All the above articles have been severally discussed and adopted by the French and English Representatives without a dissenting voice, as the conditions upon which the people of Rupert's Land enter into confederation.

The French Representatives then proposed, in order to secure the above rights, that a Delegation be appointed and sent to Pembina to see Mr. McDougall, and ask him if he could guarantee these rights by virtue of his commission; and, if he could do so, that

then the French people would join to a man to escort Mr. McDougall into his Government seat. But, on the contrary, if Mr. McDougall could not guarantee such rights, that the Delegates request him to remain where he is, or return, till the rights be guaranteed by Act of the Canadian Parliament.

The English Representatives refused to appoint delegates to go to Pembina to consult with Mr. McDougall, stating they had no authority to do so from their constituents, upon which the Council was dissolved.

The meeting at which the above resolutions were adopted, was held at Fort Garry, on Wednesday, December 1st, 1869.

WINNIPEG, December 9th, 1869.



LOWER FORT GARRY, RED RIVER SETTLEMENT,
December 9th, 1869.

TO ALL WHOM IT MAY CONCERN.

“By certain printed papers, of late date, put in circulation by the French party, communication with the Lieutenant Governor is indicated with a view to laying before him their alleged rights on the part of those now in arms. I think that course very desirable, and that it would lead to good results. Under the belief that the party in arms are sincere in their desire for peace, and feeling that to abandon, for the present, the call on the loyal to arms, would, in view of such communication, relieve the situation of much embarrassment, and so contribute to bring about peace, and save the country from what will otherwise end in ruin and desolation; I now call on and order the loyal party in the North-West Territories to cease further action under the appeal to arms made by me, and I call on the French party to satisfy the people of their sincerity in wishing for a peaceful ending of all these troubles, by sending a deputation to the Lieut.-Governor, at Pembina, without unnecessary delay. Given under my hand, at the Lower Fort Garry, this 9th day of December 1869.”

J. S. DENNIS,

Lieutenant and Conservator of the Peace,

In and for the North West Territories.

St. PAUL, January 1st, 1870.

The Hon. Joseph Howe, Secretary of State, &c., Ottawa.

SIR,—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt, while on my way to this place, from Pembina, of your despatches of the following dates and numbers respectively :—

1st. (No. 1602), of December 2nd, enclosing a copy of memorandum of the Auditor-General, approved by the Treasury Board, on the subject of Financial arrangements respecting the North-West Territories.

2nd. (No. 1611), of the 7th December, acknowledging receipt of mine of the 20th November.

3rd. (No. 1608), of the 7th December, enclosing duplicates of your despatches of the 19th and 20th November, announcing the mission of Father Thibault and Colonel de

Salaberry, and that they were bearers of a Proclamation by His Excellency Sir John Young; enclosing Orders in Council on the subject of Customs' Duties, and authorising me to make certain assurances to the people of the North-West.

4th. (No. 1612), of the 8th December, enclosing the original Proclamation referred to in Despatch of 7th December.

5th. (No. 1618), of the 10th December, calling my attention to the exposed position of Government arms, and supposed, by you, to be stored at Georgetown.

6th. (No. 1617), of the 10th December, announcing the appointment of Donald A. Smith, Esq., as Government Commissioner, and enclosing a copy of his instructions.

7th. (No. 1620), of the 11th December, authorising me to contradict certain statements alleged to have been made by you while at Fort Garry.

8th. (No. 1635), of 15th December, acknowledging mine of the 25th November, covering a confidential report to me by Major J. Wallace, and a copy of my letter to General Hunt, with respect to the removal, to Fort Abercrombie, of the arms, &c., stored at Georgetown.

I have, &c.,

W. McDougall.

DEPARTMENT OF THE SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES.

24th January, 1870.

The Hon. William McDougall, C. B.

SIR,—In your Official Report from Pembina, under date the 29th November last (No. 1089), you mention your having "prepared a Proclamation, to be issued on the first day of December," in reference to the transfer of the North-West Territories to Canada. In a subsequent letter (No. 1108), dated the 2nd December last, you report having given copies of this Proclamation in English and French to Colonel Dennis, to take with him to Fort Garry. It is also stated in the last mentioned letter, that you had commissioned Colonel Dennis to act as your "lieutenant," and as a "Conservator of the Public Peace," but that you deemed it prudent not to forward, at that moment, a Copy of the Commission.

As, up to the present moment, I have not received a copy of either the Proclamation or the Commission above referred to, may I request that you will have the goodness to furnish me with copies of both of those documents, with a view to their being added to your other communications in relation to the North-West Territories.

I have, &c., &c.,

JOSEPH HOWE.

OTTAWA, 29th January, 1870.

Hon. J. Howe, Secretary of State for the Provinces, &c.

SIR,—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt, while at Toronto, of your letter of the 24th instant, informing me that you had not, up to that date, received copies of two documents—a Proclamation and a Commission—referred to in my Official Reports from Pembina, of the 29th November, and of the 2nd December last, and requesting me to furnish you with copies of these documents.

Until I received your letter, I was under the impression that you had received printed copies of both the papers referred to, and, as they had appeared in Canadian as well as American newspapers, before I left Pembina, it did not occur to me that written copies would be deemed necessary.

I have now the honour, in accordance with your request, to enclose a copy of the Proclamation (A 9), and also a copy of the Commission to Colonel Dennis (B 9).

I have the honour to be, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

WM. McDougall.

[A. 9]

VICTORIA, by the Grace of God, of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, Queen, Defender of the Faith, &c., &c., &c.

WILLIAM McDUGALL.

To all whom it may concern,—GREETING :

[L. S.]

PROCLAMATION.

Whereas, by "The British North America Act, 1867," it was (amongst other things) enacted, that it should be lawful for Her Majesty, by and with the advice of Her Majesty's Most Honorable Privy Council, on Address from the Houses of the Parliament of Canada, to admit Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory, or either of them, into the Union or Dominion of Canada, on such terms and conditions as are in the Address expressed, and as Her Majesty thinks fit to approve.

And, whereas, for the purpose of carrying into effect, the said provisions of "The British North America Act, 1867," "The Rupert's Land Act, 1868," enacted and declared, that it should be competent for "the Governor and Company of Adventurers of England trading into Hudson's Bay," to surrender to Her Majesty, and for Her Majesty, by any instrument under Her sign manual, and signet, to accept a surrender of all, or any of the lands, territories, powers, and authorities, whatsoever, granted, or purported to be granted, by certain Letters Patent of His Late Majesty *King Charles the Second*, to the said Governor and Company within *Rupert's Land*, upon such terms and conditions as should be agreed upon, by and between Her Majesty, and the said Governor and Company.

And, Whereas, by "The Rupert's Land Act 1868, it is further enacted, that from the date of the admission of Rupert's Land into the Dominion of Canada, as aforesaid, it shall be lawful for the Parliament of Canada to make, ordain, and establish, within the said land and territory so admitted, as aforesaid, all such laws, institutions and ordinances, and to constitute such courts and officers as may be necessary for the peace, order, and good government of Her Majesty's subjects, and others therein ;

And, whereas, it is further provided by the said Act, that until otherwise enacted by the said Parliament of Canada, all the powers, authorities, and jurisdiction, of the several courts of justice, now established in Rupert's Land, and of the several officers thereof, and of all magistrates and justices, now acting within the said limits, shall continue in full force and effect therein ;

And, whereas, the said Governor and Company have surrendered to Her Majesty, and Her Majesty has accepted a surrender of all the lands, territories, rights, privileges, liberties, franchises, powers and authorities granted, or purported to be granted, by the said Letters Patent, upon certain terms and conditions agreed upon by and between Her Majesty, and the said Governor and Company ;

And, whereas, Her Majesty, by and with the advice of Her Majesty's most Honorable Privy Council, and on an Address from both the Houses of the Parliament of Canada, in pursuance of the one hundred and forty-sixth section of "The British North America Act, 1869," hath declared that Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory, shall, from the *first day* of December, in the year of Our Lord one thousand eight hundred and sixty-nine, be admitted into, and become part of the Dominion of Canada, upon the terms and conditions expressed in the said Address, of which Her Majesty has approved, and *Rupert's Land*, and the said *North-Western Territory*, are admitted into the Union, and have become part of the *Dominion of Canada* accordingly ;

And, whereas, the Parliament of Canada, by an Act intituled ; "An Act for the Temporary Government of Rupert's Land and the North-Western Territory, when united with Canada," enacted that it should be lawful for the Governor, by any order, or orders, to be by him, from time to time, made with the advice of the Privy Council (and

subject to such conditions and restrictions as to him should seem meet), to authorize and empower such officer as he may, from time to time, appoint, as Lieutenant-Governor of the North-West Territories, to make provision for the administration of justice therein, and generally to make, ordain and establish all such laws, and institutions and ordinances as may be necessary for the peace, order and good government of Her Majesty's subjects, and others therein.

Now know Ye, that we have seen fit, by Our Royal Letters Patent, bearing date the twenty-nine day of September, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and sixty-nine, to appoint the Honorable William McDougall, of the City of Ottawa, in the Province of Ontario, in Our Dominion of Canada, and Member of Privy Council for Canada, and Companion of Our Most Honorable Order of the Bath, on, from, and after the day to be named by *Us*, for the admission of Rupert's Land and the North Western Territory, aforesaid, into the Union or Dominion of Canada, to wit; or from and after the first day of December, in the year of Our Lord one thousand eight hundred and sixty-nine, to be, during our pleasure, the *Lieutenant Governor* of the North-West Territories;

And we did thereby authorize, and empower, and require and command him, in due manner, to *Do* and *Execute*, in all things that shall belong to his said command, and the *Trust* we have reposed in him, according to the several provisions and instructions granted, or appointed him, by virtue of our said Commission, and the Act of the Parliament of Canada herein before recited, and according to such instructions as have been, or may, from time to time, be given to him, and to such Laws as are or shall be enforced within the North-West Territories.

Of all which our Loving Subjects of Our Territories, and all others, whom these Presents may concern, are hereby required to take notice, and govern themselves accordingly.

In Testimony Whereof, we have caused these, Our Letters, to be made Patent, and the Great Seal of Our North-West Territories to be hereunto affixed: Witness Our Trusty and Well Beloved, The Honorable William McDougall, Member of Our Privy Council for Canada, and Companion of Our Most Honorable Order of the Bath, Lieutenant Governor of Our North-West Territories, &c., &c., &c., At the Red River, in our aforesaid North-West Territories, this first day of December, in the year of Our Lord one thousand eight hundred and sixty-nine, and in the thirty-third year of Her Reign.

By command.

J. A. N. PROVENCHER,
Secretary.

[" B 9. "]

THE NORTH-WEST TERRITORIES.

[L. S.]

By His Excellency the Honorable William McDougall, a Member of Her Majesty's Privy Council for Canada, and Companion of the Most Honorable Order of the Bath, Lieutenant-Governor of the North-West Territories.

To JOHN STOUGHTON DENNIS, Esq., Lieutenant-Colonel Military Staff, Canada,

GREETING:

Whereas, large bodies of armed men have unlawfully assembled on the high road, between Fort Garry and Pembina, in the Colony or District of Assiniboine, and have, with force and arms, arrested, and held as prisoners, numerous private and official persons, and preventing them from proceeding on their lawful journey and business, and have

committed other acts of lawless violence, in contempt and defiance of the magistrates and local authorities ;

And whereas, William McTavish, Esq., Governor of Assiniboine, did on the sixteenth day of November last, publish and make known to these armed men, and all others, whom it might concern, that the lawless acts aforesaid, and which were particularly set forth in his Proclamation, were, "contrary to the remonstrances and protests of the public authorities," and did therein himself protest against each and all, of the said unlawful acts and intents, and charged and commanded the said armed persons to immediately disperse themselves, and peaceably to depart to their habitations or lawful business under the pains and penalties of the law ;

And, whereas, since the issue of the said protest or Proclamation, certain of the armed men aforesaid, have taken possession of the public records and papers at Fort Garry, and have seized and held as prisoners, the public officers or persons having charge of the same, and, as I am creditably informed, still keep unlawful possession of the said records and public property, and with force and arms continue to obstruct public officers, and others, in the performance of their lawful duty and business, to the great terror, loss, and injury of Her Majesty's peaceful subjects, and in contempt of Her Royal authority ;

And, whereas, Her Majesty, by Letters Patent, under the Great Seal of the Dominion of Canada, bearing date the twenty-ninth day of September, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and sixty-nine, has been graciously pleased to appoint me to be, from and after the first day of December instant, Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories, and did authorize and command me to do and execute all things in due manner that should belong to my said command.

Know You, that reposing trust and confidence in your courage, loyalty, fidelity, discretion, and ability, and under, and in virtue of the authority in me vested, I have nominated and appointed, and, by these presents, do nominate and appoint you, the said John Stoughton Dennis, to be my Lieutenant and a Conservator of the Peace in and for the North-West Territories, and do hereby authorize and empower you as such to raise, organize, arm, equip and provision, a sufficient force within the said Territories, and with the said force, to attack, arrest, disarm, or disperse the said armed men so unlawfully assembled and disturbing the public peace ; and for that purpose, and with the force aforesaid, to assault, fire upon, pull down, or break into any fort, house, stronghold, or other place in which the said armed men may be found ; and I hereby authorize you, as such Lieutenant and Conservator of the Peace, to hire, purchase, impress, and take all necessary clothing, arms, ammunition, and supplies, and all cattle, horses, wagons, sleighs, or other vehicles, which may be required for the use of the force to be raised as aforesaid ; and I further authorize you to appoint as many officers and deputies under you, and to give them such orders and instructions, from time to time, as may be found necessary for the due performance of the services herein required of you, reporting to me the said appointments, and orders as you shall find opportunity, for confirmation or otherwise ; and I hereby give you full power and authority to call upon all magistrates and peace-officers to aid and assist you, and to order all or any of the inhabitants of the North-West Territories, in the name of Her Majesty the Queen, to support and assist you in protecting the lives and properties of Her Majesty's loyal subjects, and in preserving the public peace, and for that purpose, to seize, disperse, or overcome by force, the said armed men, and all others, who may be found aiding or abetting them in their unlawful acts.

And the said persons so called upon in Her Majesty's name, are hereby ordered and enjoined, at their peril, to obey your orders and directions in that behalf ; and this shall be sufficient warrant for what you or they do in the premises, so long as this Commission remains in force.

Given under my hand and seal at arms, at Red River, in the said Territories, this the first day of December, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and sixty-nine, and in the thirty-third year of Her Reign.

By Command.

J. A. N. PROVENCHER, Secretary.

WILLIAM McDUGALL.

DEPARTMENT OF SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES
OTTAWA, February 8th, 1870.

*The Honorable Wm. McDougall, Esq., C. B.,
Ottawa.*

SIR,—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letters, under date 14th, 20th, and 29th ult., the first covering a copy of a letter addressed by you to Mr. Joseph Monkman, relative to the Indian Bands in the vicinity of the Lake of the Woods; the second covering report from Colonel Dennis and other papers; and the third covering copies of the Proclamation and Commission referred to in my letter of the 24th ult.

I have, &c.,
JOSEPH HOWE.

OTTAWA, January 20th, 1870.

The Honorable the Secretary of State for the Provinces, &c., &c., &c.

SIR,—I have the honor to transmit, herewith, the report of Colonel Dennis (A. 8), detailing his proceedings in the Red River Settlement, from the 1st to the 10th December, under instructions from me, which I supposed I had authority, under my commission, to issue. The copies of the papers referred to in this report did not reach me until yesterday, in consequence of the illness of Colonel Dennis, from an injury he received on his journey from Pembina.

I have also received, and herewith enclose (B. 8), Colonel Dennis's final report, detailing the arrangements he made for the storing and disposing of the supplies, &c., collected at Stone Fort, and his visit to the Sioux, who were said to be making preparations for war on their own account.

I have the honor to be, Sir,
Your obedient servant,
WM. MCDUGALL.

[A. 8.]

*Record of Proceedings under Commission from Lieutenant-Governor McDougall, dated
1st December, 1869.*

WEDNESDAY, December 1st.

Arrived at Mr. William Hallett's on the Assiniboine, at 5 o'clock a.m. Sent messengers for Mr. James McKay, and Mr. Robert Tait, with whom and Mr. Hallett, discussed the present situation of affairs in the Settlement. Read them the Proclamation of 1st December, and my Commission, explained to them that my orders from Mr. McDougall were to ascertain the state of feeling, at the present time, among the loyal people, and should it be found such as to warrant the belief, that an appeal, with the view of organising a force to put down the malcontents, would be responded to in such a manner as to leave little or no doubt of a favorable issue. I was to make such an appeal, organise a force and put down the outbreak; on the other hand, should there be any doubt in mind as to the result, I was not to make any call, but return to Pembina, and report accordingly.

Learned that the English-speaking delegates, were to attend a meeting of the French Council, called for to-day, to make known the result of a reference to the several parishes of the French proposition to form a Provincial Government. It was said this result would show a majority of some hundreds over the party. Mr. Tait said he intended being present at the meeting, and I gave him a copy of the Proclamation, with the understanding that he would have it read on the occasion.

Mr. Hallett was decided in his opinion, that the English speaking people would now eagerly turn out to put down the *éméute*. The other two gentlemen agreed with him,

that the people were not disposed to tolerate any longer the rule of that party, but feared the result of any appeal to arms would be certain ruin to men of property, whose crops, stock, &c., the French would be sure to destroy. They admitted at the same time, that there would be no other course open if the French insisted upon establishing their Provisional Government.

The interview at Mr. Hallett's over, Mr. Tait drove me down to the town of Winnipeg.

I found Dr. Schultz, and the rest of the loyal party in the village, in a condition of much anxiety in regard to the immediate future. The French party had a day or two previously pointed two six-pounder guns on Dr. Schultz's house, and the men stood with port-fires lit, ready to fire into his premises, in consequence of the Doctor's refusal to hand over to Riel's possession the provisions in his charge, belonging to the Canadian Government. Riel, however, thought better of it, and finding the Doctor was not to be intimidated, withdrew the guns.

Public feeling was in a very excited state. Both the printing offices had been seized and were in possession of Riel's party. Mr. Grant, however, of my office, aided by a number of other Canadian gentlemen, made a lot of manuscript copies, (of what) which were distributed during the afternoon and evening, some being despatched to Prairie Portage, and others posted up in the town of Winnipeg.

Called on the Bishop, Archdeacon McLean, Mr. James Ross, Rev. Mr. Black, Judge Black, and others in the Lower Settlement. Mr. Rose, and the Rev. Mr. Black, of Killdonan, were not in when I called, nor did I see Judge Black, who was up at Fort Garry. I learned that Major Boulton of Mr. Hart's surveying staff, has been in communication with these gentlemen; that men had been enrolled and had commenced to drill at several places in the settlement.

Both these gentlemen had previously given proof of a strong desire to assist in bringing in and establishing the Government, their opinion agreeing with those previously expressed, and furthermore, having had the assurance from Mr. William Dease, who represented the loyal French, at whose house I spent a couple of hours last evening, on my way to Fort Garry, that over ninety men of that party could be relied on to fight alongside of the loyal English and Scotch for the establishment of order. I concluded it to be a duty under my commission to make the call, satisfied that there was every prospect that it would be generally responded to. I may say here that in answer to my question, M. Dease informed me that he did not think the reliable men in Riel's party would exceed three hundred in number.

Under the conviction that the Insurgents would seize upon the Stone Fort, so soon as my arrival in the settlement and the nature of my orders became known, I proceeded on to that point, arriving about six o'clock p. m. A guard was raised for the night through the exertion of the clergymen last named, together with a few other loyal people, who sent messengers through this part of the settlement. The locality, considering the short notice, turned out very well, the parish of St. Peter's particularly, in which the people consist for the most part of civilized and Christianized Indians, under the Revs. Archdeacon Cowley, and Mr. Cochrane, and who acknowledge Henry Prince as their Chief, were prompt in responding. By the morning there were about 120 men in the Fort, a majority of whom came from below. A number of young men, some forty in all, had been in the habit for several days back of assembling for drill, in one of the Company's Stores here, the drill instructor being Mr. Wm. Durie, a military school cadet, also of Mr. Hart's surveying party, who had been working in this part of the settlement. These men also had remained in the Fort for the night. I read the Proclamation, having assembled those in the Fort for the purpose, which was well received, and also explained the object of the present call upon them, and desired that they should make the same known as widely as possible.

THURSDAY, 2nd December.

I find that many of the men are deficient of arms, and those who have arms have

only the trading gun. Have sent requisitions to whatever points I have reason to believe arms are to be obtained, but anticipated that before sufficient can be had, will have to send from house to house through the settlement.

Despatched a messenger to Mr. Hart and party to cease surveying operations, and join me to assist in organizing. Reported my arrival and occupation of the Stone Fort to Governor McTavish, mentioning the object of such occupation, and enclosing him also a copy of my commission. Communication with the officer named is with much difficulty effected, as no letters are permitted, if known, to pass in or out of Fort Garry.

Sent for Major Boulton, who has been very active lately, assisting the people to organize, and gave him definite instruction as to enrolment. With his aid, together with that of M. Inkster for St. John's, Mr. Gardiner for St. Andrew, Mr. Bunn for Mapleton and St. Peter, divided the parishes into company districts, fixing the central points in each for meeting to drill.

Some twenty-one Canadians reported themselves in a body from the town of Winnipeg this evening, and enrolled their names. They tell me the Canadians in the town number about thirty, and are all anxious to serve. I have, therefore, instructed Dr. Lynch, a military school cadet, to enrol a company in Winnipeg, to be made up of Canadians and other men in the vicinity. As the Canadians are all, more or less, acquainted with drill, I directed Dr. Lynch simply to organize, and then let the men remain quietly in their usual lodgings until further orders. Their presence there in that way, having fully instructed them to avoid being any cause of offence to the French, it seemed to me could be no cause of irritation, and the knowledge that they were there, might tend to prevent any outrage on person or property of loyal people in the town. The enrolment here I placed under Mr. William Dwire, and charged Mr. A. N. Muckle, military school cadet, with that duty in the upper part of St. Andrews, and the north end of St. Paul's. Kildonan and the south end of St. Paul's I entrusted to Mr. Cowland, an English volunteer officer.

Judge Black was with me for several hours during the day.

Sent Captain Webb, a Canadian volunteer officer and M. S. C., who was surveying up the Assiniboine, full instruction to cease surveying, and with the staff of his party, who are all cadets, proceed to Prairie Portage, and organize a force of four companies there. When organized, equipped, and provisioned, to advise me, express, and await orders, drilling industriously in the meantime.

Assembled Chief "Prince's" men in the Fort to-day. The Proclamation was read and explained to the men in Indian; it was also read in the English, many of the men having a fair understanding of that language, after which I explained, as interpreted by * * *, the manner in which the country had become connected with Canada, and the object of the incoming government. They all seemed loyally disposed, cheering heartily for the Queen, and those of them who had guns, firing them off with evident enthusiasm.

Knowing the views of the Lieutenant Governor to be opposed to the employment, at the present time, of the Indians in putting down the insurgents, and such being my own feelings also, while at the same time it would not be politic to dampen the dawning loyalty of these men by refusing their services entirely, I made the Chief select fifty of his best men to come into the Fort as a guard. I have explained to him that neither he nor his men will be called upon to fight, excepting in case the Fort is attacked, and as he is an intelligent man, I made him acquainted with the reasons. He expressed himself as perfectly satisfied, and left me with his pride evidently gratified by being entrusted with the service. The rest of his men I paid and sent home, having thanked them in the name of the Government for their promptness in turning out.

Wrote to the Lieutenant Governor, (see letter to him of this date.) Mr. Dease and Dr. Schultz were with me during the evening. Mr. Dease still sanguine as to the stand which will be taken by the loyal French.

The printing presses in the Town remaining in the armed custody of the French, sent

Mr. Laurie, a practical-printer, up to Winnipeg for a small hand press and type lent by Dr. Schultz.

FRIDAY, December 3rd.

Made inspection of the Fort, investigating contents of magazine. &c., ordered removal of some large Hudson Bay boats which had been laid up for winter, close to the outside of the Fort walls. Directed bastions to be cleared out, made working drawings of a sled for mounting a brass six pounder gun, found in a corner of one of the stores. Gave orders for this sled to be built by Mr. Avel, the Company's engineer at Lower Fort.

The return of men enrolled in the several Parishes, giving a satisfactory assurance that the requisite force would be raised. I gave orders for the delivery of beef and other supplies to be stored in the Fort.

Mr. Hart, P. L. S., an excellent man of business, was appointed quartermaster and entered at once upon his duties, The hand printing press having arrived this morning, Mr. Laurie set up and printed the Proclamation, a number of which were at once distributed through the Settlement.

There would appear to have been a good deal of excitement in the Town of Winnipeg last night, judging from a note received from Dr. Shultz, in which he states that his premises were entered about midnight by Riel with twenty-four men, but having delayed a few hours at Mr. John Tait's on his way up, he thus escaped being made prisoner. He states also that search was made throughout the Town for Dr. Bown, but Bown had escaped, and was in hiding, where, no one appeared to know.

About the middle of the day Dr. Bown arrived in company with Mr. Stuart Mulkins, of my office, in a room over which he (Bown) had been concealed during last night, and had escaped detection, although the premises had been searched by Riel and his party.

Wrote Dr. Schultz, that the Canadians in Winnipeg were to keep perfectly quiet, and remain in their lodgings, and not to invite, either by word or by deed, any attack from the French, to bear even insult without resenting it—not to fire upon any of the Insurgents without being first fired upon. I represented to him that a collision, at present, would, in consequence of our not being fully prepared, possibly result disadvantageously.

Wrote Governor McTavish, asking orders to receive such arms as were at the following Posts of the Company, viz:—1st. Port Alexander; 2nd. White Horse Plains; 3rd. Prairie Portage; 4th. Oak Point, Manitoubah. In the evening received his reply, marked "B."

Received the numerous calls from people in the settlement, expressing a strong desire to co-operate in putting down the French now in Fort Garry.

Learning that Mr. Boyd, of Boyd and Inkster, had a large supply of powder, a lot of arms, stock of blankets, and a considerable quantity of beef, sent an order for them, and they arrived during the day. The guns were at once distributed among the men who were deficient in arms. I also made it known that where ever there were any spare arms, I wished them sent to the Fort for the use of the Government.

SATURDAY, December 4th.

Received a note from Dr. Schultz this morning, in which he states that a number of the enrolled Canadians and others collected at his house, last evening; it is presumed, on his request, anticipating a possible attack on his property, and the Government provisions in his charge; that, in the course of the night, bodies of men of the French party repeatedly made their appearance around the outside of his house and premises, evidently inviting attack from the party inside. That they repeatedly adjourned for liquor to C'Lone's Saloon; that they were there harangued by Riel, — finally that the came to the front of his house, went through various manoeuvres, detaching parties to the rear, &c., and then went off to the Fort, leaving the Dr. and his party, between one and two o'clock A. M., unmolested.

From the occurrences of last night it is evident to me, that a very critical condition of affairs exists at Winnipeg. A single shot which may be fired by either party would precipitate possible deplorable results. As yet, the force I am organizing is not, nor will it be probably in a condition to justify a collision for ten or twelve days. I shall, therefore, give orders to the Canadians to withdraw from Winnipeg, and with that view have written to order—a copy of which is marked "A 1." Wrote also instructions to Major Boulton on this subject, marked "A 2." Wrote also Dr. Schultz to same effect (see copy marked "A 3.")

Towards evening, Mr. James McKay, and Mr. Nolin, a French half-breed, arrived, bringing a copy of the French List of Rights—the first I had seen—and stating that their object was, as individuals, anxious to see peace restored, to ascertain how far I could put them in a position to assure the French party that these rights would be granted by Mr. McDougall.

I explained to them that I could give no assurance whatever,—that I could only say that some of those "Rights," as they were called, I had reason to believe it was the Governor's intention to have embodied in his policy, but that others of them could not, in my opinion, be allowed.

Mr. McKay begged that the order to arm, on the part of the rest of the Settlement, should be delayed further, as his belief still was that matters could be settled amicably, and represented, in strong language, the outrages that would ensue, owing to the savage and revengeful instincts of these men, in case of hostilities. He expressed the opinion that if blood were shed in the Settlement, Mr. McDougall, and his family, at Pembina, would be murdered, and, further, that even, at the present time, my own life was in danger from assassination, and cautioned me from what had come to his knowledge, to be very careful in my movements outside the Fort.

With regard to the prospect of a peaceful settlement, he said he was convinced that even now, if the French party could be satisfied that Mr. McDougall actually held a parchment commission under the Great Seal, and that he had been duly sworn into office as Lieutenant Governor, they would no longer oppose his entrance.

I then gave Mr. McKay the memorandum marked "A 4," and he and Mr. Nolin left the Fort, sanguine that my proposition might lead to the disbanding of the French.

Mr. Alexander McKenzie, of Mapleton Parish, a Scotch half-breed, who had formerly been for some years the master of a Post in the Hudson Bay service, was introduced to me to-day, and expressed his willingness to enrol a company in the parish, and I gave him the requisite authority.

Received note from Major Boulton, marked "E;" also another from Dr. Schultz, marked "F."

SUNDAY, December 5th.

Sent up orders for enrolment of a company in St. James, also one in Headingly, that for the latter being enclosed to Rev. J. Carrie (see Mr. Carrie's note previously received, marked "G.") Enclosed, with Mr. Carrie's letter to me, was an address of welcome from inhabitants of High Bluff, Assiniboine, to Lieutenant Governor, marked "G H.")

Mr. Joseph Marion, French half-breed, of the loyal party, and who had been sent to Prairie Portage with Mr. Farmer, to post the Proclamation, on the first, arrived during the day. Sent him up to Mr. Dease's, directing the latter to have his men armed, and await orders.

Received a second letter from Major Boulton, marked "I." This officer, and Mr. Snow, called in the evening. Mr. Snow very desirous to have Canadians allowed to remain in Winnipeg, to guard Government Provisions, &c. Told him whoever stayed there after the orders I had given, assumed the responsibility, that as representing the Government, I did not desire a guard on the provisions at the risk of its causing a collision at the present time.

MONDAY, December 6th.

It having been represented that the response would be more complete if I would make a call, and accompany it with evidence, that all could see as to my authority, I put the same in type yesterday, on the C. M. S. press coming to hand, and to-day it was printed and distributed (see copy marked "K 1.")

Received letter from Major Boulton, as to state of affairs in Winnipeg, marked "K." At once wrote and sent off peremptory orders, reiterating those of the 4th inst., for the Canadians to leave the town (see copy marked "K 2.")

Wrote Mr. James Ross, in reply to his note (copy marked "K 4.") Reply marked "K 3."

Understanding that Mr. Grant, of Sturgeon Creek, had a small howitzer, wrote him, sending a messenger for it.

Judge Black was with me for an hour or two to-day. Mr. Sutherland, a Member of the Council of the colony, and an Officer of the Kildonan Company, with Mr. McBeth, called also. Mr. Sutherland seemed strongly of opinion that, if I would meet the French Council, it might result in their sending a delegation to the Lieutenant Governor. I expressed my willingness to do so, and he left with the understanding that he was to see the French Leaders to-morrow morning, and, if possible, arrange for a meeting.

TUESDAY, December 7th.

Last evening, about eight o'clock, a Mr. Alexander Black and his wife called upon me.

Mrs. Black had been up to town to consult Dr. Schultz professionally, and had had much difficulty, so she informed me, in getting into the village, and still more in getting access to the Doctor, in consequence of close investment of the place, and particularly of the house of the latter, by the French party.

She brought a verbal message from Dr. Schultz to me, as he told her he was afraid to trust a letter, to the effect that some forty Canadians were in a state of siege in his house. That they could not go out either to get food, wood or water, and begged for help. This, it is clear, would not have occurred had, my previous orders, repeatedly given, for the Canadians to leave the town, been obeyed. My force in the Settlement was not as yet organized; and not having heard, so far, from Capt. Webb, I felt that the crisis was one involving very grave consequences.

Thinking, however, on the moral effect of the object I had in view, should the Canadians be captured, it seemed a duty to relieve them, if possible; and believing, as Mrs. Black said, the French in the town were not more than fifty in number; that on the appearance of a considerable body of men, coming up from the direction of the Lower Fort, the French guard would fall back on Fort Garry, and so leave time for the besieged party to come out and return with us; and that the relief could be effected in this way, without necessarily having a collision, I determined on that course.

About forty men of the company, the head-quarters of which are at Stone Fort, were drilling at the time, and expressed their readiness to go, and I then got a sleigh and drove up the Settlement, to gather, if possible, sixty additional volunteers from among the enrolled men, believing that I should have little or no difficulty in getting that number in St. Andrews. I found, however, that the requisite force would not be forthcoming. Indeed, there appeared to me to be an entire absence of the ardour which existed previously. Some of the leading men in St. Andrews, who are filling the position of officers in the two companies in this parish, viz:—Mr. D. Gunn, Mr. Joseph Macdonald, Mr. Thomas Sinclair,—met me at the Rev. Mr. Gardener's, and it became evident that the project for the relief of the Canadians must fall to the ground.

I expressed a conviction that some agency was at work which had produced a change in the feelings of the people, and the gentlemen present, agreeing with me, remarked that it might probably be accounted for by the distribution through the parishes, during yesterday, of the French "List of Rights." It was stated, that, up to the time of dissemination of this document, no one but themselves knew what the demands of the malcontents were;

and now that they had been published, some of them proving reasonable in their character, and the whole accompanied by expressions of a willingness to send a deputation to Pembina, to treat with the Lieutenant Governor, it might easily be conceived that the effect on the rest of the people would be to make them less jealous of French domination, and more hopeful of seeing peace brought about by other means than by a resort to arms.

Returned to the Fort at 2 a.m., finding a messenger had arrived during my absence, bringing from the Lieutenant Governor a Proclamation directing the former officials of the Colony to continue to discharge their several duties as previous to the first instant. As the messenger returned at once, I wrote to the Lieutenant Governor hurriedly in return, giving an account of the changed situation, and the evident effect of the French "List of Rights," a copy of which, as also a copy of note received from Mr. James Ross, I enclosed with letter.

Sent off with at 3 a.m., a verbal message, to be conveyed, if possible, to the besieged party, telling them of my inability to relieve them, and that if obliged to surrender, they must only get the best terms they could.

Desiring to investigate further the evident change in the feeling of the people in regard to aggressive measures, I drove up to the Rev. Mr. Black's and convened a meeting there of leading men in the Scotch Settlement. There were present, Judge Black, Rev. Mr. Black, Mr. James Ross, Mr. Bernard Ross, Chief Factor Hudson's Bay Company, Mr. Sutherland, Member of Council, Messrs. John and William Fraser, also members of Council, and Mr. Polson.

I speedily became satisfied that the only condition on which the Scotch people would now arm and drill, would be to act strictly on the defensive; indeed, I was informed that a public meeting, held in the vicinity, had just broken up, at which delegates were appointed to visit me at the Stone Fort, without delay, to request that aggressive measures might for the present be abandoned. This attitude on their part, just at the present time, strengthened the conclusion I had come to, as to the change in sentiment of the people of the Lower Parishes.

A strong desire was expressed by those present, that I should agree, if the rebels were willing, to meet their council, and see if communication could be opened up with the Lieutenant Governor, in hopes that it might bring about peace. I explained that Mr. Sutherland was authorized by me last evening to see the leaders of the French party, and arrange for such meeting this morning. Mr. Sutherland said there was so much excitement among them, all in reference to the seizing of Dr. Schultz's house, that he had found it impossible to get an interview with Riel. It was settled then that Mr. Sutherland should arrange such a meeting, if possible, to-morrow morning, and, in any case let me know what has been done in that direction.

Taken altogether, it appears to me probable that the resort to arms to put down the French party, at the present time must be given up. I shall not, however, discontinue the drill going on in the several parishes, believing that such will not be without good moral effect on probable negotiations.

While at the meeting at Mr. Black's, the town was represented as being in a state of great excitement, and before I left, news came that the Canadian party had been obliged to surrender, and were taken to Fort Garry as prisoners.

As regards this unfortunate affair, there was no force with which the party could have been relieved, and the French party being in overpowering numbers, there was no alternative but to surrender: indeed, it was an act of folly there remaining there to be made prisoners of, as I have reason to believe they could have made their escape a few hours previously, without danger or difficulty (see Major Boulton's report on this subject, marked "L").

My constant anxiety, since issuing the first orders on Saturday last, for them to leave the town, has been to get them away quietly, feeling that at any hour, through their indiscretion, the entire object of the Government might have been frustrated.

A young gentleman, Mr. Mulkins, belonging to one of the surveying parties, and whom I sent up to Fort Garry, during the forenoon, to convey a message in connection

with the besieged Canadians, I learned also had been taken prisoner, and confined with Dr. Schultz's party.

While at Mr. Black's, Mr. Caldwell arrived from the town, bringing a copy in French of what may be styled a "Declaration of Independence," and bearing, unmistakably, the mark of American manufacture. Mr. Caldwell said he had been forced to print it, that the French were not satisfied to keep his press from him, but in addition, forced him to work for them, by threats from armed men, who were placed in possession.

WEDNESDAY, December 8th.

Received a letter from Bishop McCrae this morning (see Copy marked "N"). This letter evidently corroborated the fact of the change of sentiment among the people. This is further strengthened by the remarks of people who called upon me: these, however, I observe, are few in number compared with those of last week. In the course of the day received another letter from the Bishop marked "O," in which his Lordship is joined by Archdeacon McLean, in begging that no aggressive measures may be taken.

It is unnecessary to say that measures of this character are out of the question, as people evidently will not sustain them at present.

Printed and distributed the Lieutenant Governnor's Proclamation, confirming the former officials in office.

Have heard nothing as yet from Mr. Sutherland, regarding prospect of a meeting with the French Council.

THURSDAY, December 9th.

Having become convinced that it is useless longer to entertain any expectation of being enabled to get a reliable force with which to put down the party in arms, decided to abandon the call upon the English speaking people, and take advantage of the disposition of the French, as expressed by them, to send delegates to Lieutenant Governor, and so withdraw from a situation which the change in sentiment during the last few days has rendered a false one. I, therefore, this morning issued a notification marked "P," sending a manuscript copy, early in the day, to Mr. Bannatyne, at Winniipeg, with a note (see copy marked "K 5,") asking him to lay it before the French Council.

Shall retain chief "Prince" and his fifty men to guard the Fort for a few days, until events further develop themselves.

In course of day received copy of French Declaration of Independence, marked "R."* Received this evening Joseph Marion's letter containing message from Mr. Dease, marked "S," by it, the French party, it will be seen, have also determined to act only on the defensive.

Gave orders to cease drill and stop the receipt of any further supplies.

Gave Major Boulton orders to go to Prairie Portage and stop the drilling there; also to convene a council of the Indians in that neighborhood, particularly the Sioux, who, I have been informed, are disposed to anticipate a call from the Government by making war on the French party, and tell them to be quiet.

No communication has, as yet, reached me from Captain Webb, and the only conclusion I can arrive at is, that his message has been intercepted.

FRIDAY, December 10th.

Two of the chief warriors of Henry "Prince's" Band, were introduced by him to-day. There were the usual protestations of loyalty to the Queen, and readiness to fight her enemies. These men live up on the Red River, in the disaffected districts, and say that their families are in fear of the French half-breeds.

To do the Indians justice, they will, I believe, be found loyal to the Government, throughout the territory.

Messrs. Arkland and Elwood arrived from Winnipeg to-day. They report the French continuing to arrest Canadians wherever they find them, and that even they, themselves, although having taken no part, feel that they may be arrested any moment. They bring no

* Not in the original.

news regarding the imprisoned Canadians, but report that the French have commenced the search for, and taking possession of arms in private houses, asserting their intention to go through the settlement for that purpose.

Reported to the Lieutenant Governor, sending this Record up to the present time, and stating my intention to join him, at Pembina at an early day, and trusted the papers to two of Henry Prince's Indians, selected by him for that purpose.

J. S. DENNIS,

Lieutenant and Conservator of the Peace
in and for the N.-W. Territories.

COPIES of Papers referred to in the foregoing Record of Proceedings.

["B"]

FORT GARRY, December 4th, 1869.

Colonel Dennis, &c., &c., Lower Fort Garry.

SIR,—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 3rd inst., making enquiries as to the number of guns which might be had from the Hudson Bay Company's Posts near the Settlement. In reply, I beg to say that, at present, I cannot give any very definite information, as the stock, at no time very large at any of those Posts, will, at present, entirely depend on what the wants of the Indians have been in the Autumn; but there may be still on hand at those Posts, as follows:—At Fort Alexander, possibly 10 guns; at White Horse Plains, from 10 to 15; at Point du Chêne from 4 to 6. At Portage la Prairie must be very few.

From here I could supply a very large number, if I could get them out which for more than a week past I have been watching an opportunity to do. Had it not been for the excitement about the pork there would have been in all probability sixty guns in one of the out-houses here, which is without the wall, besides a good supply sent to Oak Point, but which, owing to the appearance of the people here, Dr. Cowan caused to be countermanded when the sledges were loading. I enclose four orders for the delivery of all arms to your messengers, having authority from you to give receipt for them.

I have the honor, &c.,
WM MCTAVISH.

[A 1.]

STONE FORT, December 4th, 1869.

Memorandum of Orders for the Enrolled Canadians in the Town of Winnipeg.

These men are not in a position where they can be supported by any force, of which I am at present aware, should they be attacked by the Rioters under Riel, which seems to me likely to occur.

I am convinced the object of the latter is now to provoke them beyond endurance, and so precipitate a collision, in which he would try to show that the Canadians were the aggressors, with the hope, that, in such case, he might obtain the aid of the rest of the French party.

I have, therefore, to request that the Canadians will withdraw from the Village, and come down to the Scotch Settlement, where I will meet them, and establish them in defensible quarters, in which they will serve as an outpost, and under circumstances where they can be readily reinforced, if necessary.

They had better come down this evening, and report to me, or to Major Boulton, at the Rev. Mr. Black's.

J. S. DENNIS,

Lieut.-Colonel.

[A 2.]

LOWER FORT, 4th December, 1869.

Memorandum for Major Boulton.

I have instructed Canadians to withdraw from town, and propose to put them, say, in the Scotch Church, if the Rev. Mr. Black is willing. They will remain there with as many additional men as you may think necessary, obtained in the neighborhood. They will serve as an outpost and rendezvous for the loyal, in case of any demonstration being made by Riel's party on the Lower Settlement. This post will be under your immediate command. I have sent forward a supply, consisting of 50 blankets, 20 guns, 2 quarters beef, 4 bags flour, 1 cooking stove, furniture and pipes, 10 lbs. tea, 1 bag bullets, 2,000 caps.

Anything further required you can probably procure there. If not, let me know. Organise the men as you think best. Report to me every day, if possible. Should Mr. Black not be willing, and you can find any other easily defensible house there, take it instead of the Church. Let your sentries be particular to note movements along the highroads, and send forward notices of any such at once. I have received, from parties now with me, who left Fort Garry late this afternoon, information that such a move in this direction is contemplated.

J. S. DENNIS.

P.S.—Write me fully and candidly the present feeling in the Scotch Settlement, to-morrow. Hire any transport necessary.

J. S. D.

[A 3.]

STONE FORT, 4 December, 1869.

Dr. Schultz, Winnipeg.

MY DEAR DR. SCHULTZ,—From the occurrences of last night, the anxiety of Riel is evident to have the Canadians draw the first blood, which latter would be anything but desirable just now. I have come to the conclusion that they must be withdrawn, and have therefore ordered it by bearer.

I shall go up and meet them at the Scotch Church, and establish them there as an outpost, under Major Boulton. I see no other course for you to pursue, but to send Mrs. Schultz to a friend's house, as you propose, shut up your premises, and let the property take its chance. As to the Government provisions, should the guard be still over them, I shall not, as representing the Government, require them to remain there any longer. They had better, therefore, lock up the place and leave. I would be glad to have them come down with the others, and enrol in the force at the outpost; but will leave that to themselves.

Were my force organised I would not allow Canadians to be used as you have been there; but I am not at all in a position to act, and regret to say things move but slowly here. You speak of enthusiasm—I have not seen it yet with anybody but "Prince's" men.

In haste, truly yours,

J. S. DENNIS.

[A 4.]

STONE FORT, LOWER SETTLEMENT, 4th December, 1869.

MEMORANDUM.—Mr. James McKay tells me the French party say they are willing to obey the Queen's commands, but assert that the Hon. Wm. McDougall, is not duly appointed and sworn into office as Her Majesty's Representative, and that he thinks, if they could be satisfied of this, they would offer no further opposition to that hon. gentleman entering the settlement.

If there is any doubt upon this point humiliating to the Queen's Representative to be called on to show his commission, Mr. McDougall, I think, would be disposed

to consent to even this, rather than be the cause of bloodshed among the people, I would therefore, make the following proposition :—

I will go to Pembina, and obtain the Commission, and place the same in the hands of Governor McTavish, together with the certificate of the Crown Law Adviser, at present with the Lieutenant Governor, that the latter has been duly sworn into office. Upon this the French party at once to disband, and offer no further opposition to Mr. McDougall entering the Settlement.

Upon the leaders of the French party signing an agreement to the above effect, I will give orders to cease any further steps towards arming by the English speaking people in the Territory.

J. S. DENNIS,

Lieutenant and Conservator of the Peace.

[E.]

WINNIPEG, 4th December, 1869.

Lieutenant Colonel Dennis.

SIR.—I have the honor to inform you that I have received your communication containing *memo* to the Canadians. Dr. Lynch, Mr. Snow, Dr. Schultz, and myself, have consulted together, and have come to the conclusion, that, under the circumstances (that we have 70 men and 65 good arms on the premises), we have a strong position, and could resist successfully a strong attack. It is now nine o'clock, the men are all posted, and the rebels know it. There are no men moving about, and no indications of any attack, and a retreat would, or might, inspire the rebels with more confidence than they appear at present to possess.

Your *memo* to the Canadians says: "they had better come down this evening," which, apparently, leaves us the opportunity of using our own judgment under existing circumstances. I wrote to you this afternoon. Mr. Prud'homme's house is a large one, and empty, and could be occupied and filled with provisions and stores. I will go down to-morrow, and see you, and receive your further orders. I have written a letter to Mr. Pinkham at St. James's, to call a meeting, that I might enrol volunteers and drill them.

I have, &c.,

C. W. BOULTON.

[F.]

TOWN OF WINNIPEG, Saturday night.

DEAR COLONEL DENNIS,—Events have a good deal changed since the writing of this morning. The firm stand seems to have had its effect, and to day nothing of moment occurred. This afternoon President Bruce visited me (no guard) at 4 p.m. Said he had come to explain to me, and to ask explanation; reminded me of the "bon accord" in times past, and of the services I had rendered him in times of sickness, and he asked me where was the sticking point in their resolutions? On my mentioning the insulting nature of the last one, he said that they had not so meant it, and that I must have an incorrect copy—spoke slightly of Riel—said they could not go to see the Governor at Pembina, but would like to see you. I told him that I thought you would see him alone, as he proposed without Riel, but thought that Riel would spoil everything—assented to this, and said that after he returned from Stinking River to-morrow, he would see me, and arrange a meeting. I give this for what it is worth—other indications point to its probability.

With thanks for your kind wishes as to Mrs. Schultz.

I remain, &c.,

JOHN SCHULTZ.

P.S. Captain Boulton writes the news of most of the Canadians here, and I think the altered circumstances will probably induce you to countermand or modify order.

HEADINGLY, December 3, 1869.

Colonel Dennis.

DEAR SIR,—As Mr. Farmer, who brought the Proclamation here, intimated to me that you wished me to give some information concerning the loyalty of this parish, I have the honor to inform you, that nearly all the people are loyal to the Queen, and wish to become a part of the Dominion of Canada. I have spoken to a number of persons lately about the matter, and all have expressed their willingness to enlist as volunteers, to bring in and establish the Hon. Wm. McDougall as Governor in these Territories, and also to assist in preserving British Law and order amongst us. A paper to that effect is now being signed at Mr. John Taylor's house. I am sure if you were only to come among us, or if any one were to come with proper authority to call out volunteers, I do not think any one in the parish would refuse to go, except a few individuals who are of no account anywhere, and who would do well to vanish into "thin air" as soon as possible. I enclose a copy of resolutions, passed at a public meeting held at Mr. Tait's house, November, 29, *i.e.*, before the Proclamation was issued. You will see from them that the parish proved loyal then; it is much more so now, *since the Proclamation has been issued.*

I may remark, that in reference to the first resolution, it is apparently defective. To express the wish of the meeting, the latter part of it would read thus: "until the entry of the Canadian Government, and then we will support and strengthen the said Canadian Government."

With best wishes for the success of your undertaking,

I remain, yours, &c.,

JAMES CARRIE,

Incumbent Headingly Parish.

"GOD SAVE THE QUEEN."

["G. H."]

To the Honorable William McDougall, C.B., Lieutenant Governor of the British North-West Territory in America.

We, the undersigned inhabitants of High Bluff, desire to express to your Excellency, as Her Majesty's Representative, our sentiments of *loyalty* to Her Majesty the Queen of Great Britain and Ireland, and also our ardent desire that your Excellency may speedily arrive safe among us:—deeply regretting that untoward circumstances have so long deprived us of Your Excellency's presence.

Signed by 61.

(I.)

WINNIPEG, December 4th, 1869.

To Colonel Dennis.

SIR,—I have the honor to inform you I proceeded to Kildonan School House. Owing to a break down on the road, I was detained an hour. I found the School House full, and proceeded at once to explain the object of my coming. I read your Commission and Service Roll Heading. After concluding the speaking, some of the older men questioned me as to the legality of it. I argued the point, and failed quite to satisfy them, though the majority were against the legal quibble, but I judged it best to satisfy parties, and agreed to postpone the meeting to 10 o'clock this morning, to allow said parties to get Judge Black's opinion (I told them the only legal authorities, the Governor, Mr. Richard's and Judge Black were satisfied of the legality.)

I met them again this morning at 10 o'clock, though not so numerous. Judge Black had given his opinion—these men were perfectly satisfied, and came forward and headed the Roll. I took down sixty names then and there, formed a company, appointed officers and 4 sergeants; 1 officer and 2 sergeants to the Districts in which their squad or subdivision reside. The people were numerous, and are to assemble on Monday at 1 o'clock, when I expect over 100 men to be there, and I will have two company's officered and formed, and ready to turn out at a call from their Lieutenants and Ensigns. I have come up here to assist Dr. Schultz and the party; I shall put the men here in a thorough state of organization, and find out the amount of ammunition and arms. We are going to assemble here, and keep guard all night, and resist attack; but I shall not allow any one to provoke it. Will you send up ammunition, &c., as we ought to have it handy near here. I think we ought to have provisions, &c., stored for necessity. It will hold a great number, and when the Portage people come down it will be required.

The people here are very anxious, and everywhere wish the organization to be completed as soon as possible, for the French gain strength by time. There was quite a demonstration last night. Mr. * * * place was also placed at our disposal for stores or men.

If you send me any orders to carry out, I will do so without delay. We shall have about 70 to-night, to defend this place, I think. Owing to my break down last night, and hurry, I had not time to leave your letter for Judge Black, but sent it this morning. Everything is cheering for number. Guns are wanted. If the spare arms from the Fort were sent to Mr. Prud'homme's house, or elsewhere, they would be handy, and many men want them. I will take steps to have them securely stored when they arrive.

I have, &c.,

C. W. BOULTON, Major.

(K.)

December 6th, 1869.

Lieut.-Col. Dennis.

SIR,—I have the honor to inform you, I arrived here last night, about eleven o'clock, and was met by a messenger, telling me to be careful how I went into town. I accordingly left my horse and cutter at * * * and went on foot, got around by the river, and entered Dr. Schultz's house about twelve o'clock. The town was full of Frenchmen, and they kept parading about, and placed sentries all around the Doctor's, and kept us on the alert all night. There were about seventy or seventy-five in the Doctor's house. The greatest number of French who left the Fort and entered the town was ninety-six. They were counted as they passed up. They kept coming and going all night. I assembled the officers of the company, with Dr. Schultz and Mr. Snow, and told them your orders, and pointed out the reasons why they should not remain on the premises any longer, so they agreed to leave. I left directions as to their mode of procedure, and gave strict orders not to be later than two or three o'clock at the outside, in leaving. I then left with Hallett to go to St. James Parish meeting at nine o'clock, and came across the Prairie to Kildonan and drilled about 100 men, and had the provisions, blankets, &c., put into * * * as the most convenient place to put them in, to await your further orders. I then went back to town about four o'clock, but could not enter to see what was delaying them, and heard that Dr. Schultz's house was closely invested, at least that men were all around it. I met * * * going in, and asked him to let me know what was going on. I went over to his house, and he tells me he did not get in either; at least he thought it imprudent to enter. I feel a little apprehensive about them. I do not know why they have not come out. If they were to leave, I do not think the French would fire the first shot, but they begin to look very ugly, and Bishop McCrea tells me there cannot be less than 600 armed men in connection with the Fort. It is thought that some attempt at a peaceful solution should be made by a discussion of their rights as printed. Riel has showed such strength of force that, as an enemy, he is not to be despised. I am only

giving now to you opinions that I hear in conversation. The people about here express their willingness to take a stand, but apparently a panic is easily created. There will be two companies nearly in this Parish. St. Paul's had forty-three names subscribed, Hallett's Parish only gave sixteen names, all good ones.

The meeting was small, Mr. * * * says that the Parish is a good deal in the hands of Bannatyne and Mr. McKenny, which accounts for it. I was intending to go into town to-night to see if I could reach Dr. Schultz's house, or hear anything of them, but as * * * has gone in, I have thought better to remain here, as I am an object of suspicion, and would be detained as prisoner.

I have strictly enjoined, repeatedly, all the Canadians to suffer insult rather than provoke attack, or fire a shot, and I think they all see the necessity of it, and will be very careful. I heard they do not number over twenty-five or thirty to-night, as several left. I suppose when it became known, it was decided to evacuate, though I told Dr. Lynch not to let it be known till the preparations were made. I enclose a letter from the Bishop. The French apparently wish to avoid clashing with the English and Scotch, and if a bold stand is made through the organization, it may bring about a peaceful solution. They say the French cannot continue in force, as their families will be left, or are left, in a very destitute state. I will be about in the morning to find out the state of affairs. If the Canadians do leave, [the Town as well as the Fort will be entirely in the hands of the French. I have given you an account of everything I think of worthy of note.

I have the honor,

C. W. BOULTON.

[K 1.]

Recites commission from Lieutenant Governor McDougall to Colonel Dennis. "By virtue of the above commission from the Lieutenant Governor, I now hereby call on, and order, all loyal men of the North-West Territories, to assist me, by every means in their power, to carry out the same, and thereby restore public peace and order, and uphold the supremacy of the Queen in this part of Her Majesty's Dominions.

J. S. DENNIS,
Lieutenant, &c.

Given under my hand, at the Stone Fort, Lower Settlement, this 6th day of December, in the year of our Lord, 1869.

[K 2.]

STONE FORT, 2-30 P.M., 6th December, 1869.

MEMO.

To the Enrolled Canadians at Winnipeg.

I am told the Rebels are paraded in force in the town of Winnipeg, and are acting in a manner calculated to provoke a collision with the loyal party.

I cannot be a party to precipitating such an event just at the present time, and must, therefore, reiterate my orders of the 4th instant, to the enrolled Canadians, to leave the Town and establish themselves at Kildonan School-House, where there is a supply of provisions, and where they will have assistance at hand if attacked.

Major Boulton, or in his absence, Dr. Lynch, must see to this being done. Of course, if the attempt to come down would bring on a fight, they may remain where they are, but not encouraging hostilities. Let them come down under cover of the evening.

J. S. DENNIS,
Lieutenant-Colonel

[K 3.]

STONE FORT, 6th December, 1869.

James Ross, Esq., Winnipeg.

MY DEAR SIR,—I have this moment received your note. I think it my duty, under my Commission, *not to relax preparations* to put down, by force of arms if necessary, the present outrageous condition of things in the Settlement. At the same time, I will be glad to see the gentlemen of whom you speak. I will not act on the aggressive so long as there is, to my mind, a satisfactory reason for further delay. It would be the greatest possible relief to me to see peace restored without resorting to force; but there has been so much temporizing, that it would almost seem to me, the insurgent party are now actually drawing moral strength from that very source.

Believe me, &c.,

J. S. DENNIS.

[K 4.]

6th December, 1869.

Colonel Dennis, &c., &c.

DEAR SIR,—As an opportunity offers, I drop you this line to express my strong conviction that you should not make any aggressive movement at present.

Pray do nothing aggressively. I am still hopeful of peace. A civil war is altogether too dear a price to pay for any thing wanted on either side. Many others think so too.

Yours truly, &c.,

JAMES ROSS.

P.S.—You may have a deputation from the English-speaking people to-day, or to-morrow, urging that you should make no aggressive movements. I say you *may*; I cannot tell this till afternoon. In haste.

J. R.

["K. 5."]

A. E. B. Bannatyne, Esq., Winnipeg.

DEAR MR. BANNATYNE,—I hope the enclosed will satisfy the French party of my desire not to see the country made desolate upon a question which, I am confident, admits of a peaceful solution. Be good enough to make it known to the parties in arms, if I can contribute in way to bring about a settlement, I shall be glad to do so.

The paper will be printed and distributed to-day.

Believe me, &c.

J. S. DENNIS.

["L."]

LOWER FORT GARRY, December 9th, 1869.

SIR,—I have the honor to state for your information my knowledge of the occurrences of the past few days. According to instructions, I proceeded on Friday, the 3rd, to the Scotch Settlement, for the purpose of organizing Companies in the Parish. The following day I received a letter, asking me to come up to Dr. Schultz's, that a number of men had assembled there the previous evening to defend the place, as an attack was feared from the French. I arrived there in the evening, after my other duties had been performed, and found they had been reinforced, and numbered about sixty men, Canadians and others. The cause assigned to me for the assembling, was, that the French had been drinking in the Saloons, and in that state might make an attack. I took down the names of all the men, and divided them into sub-divisions and sections. They choose their officers, and non-commissioned officers, and I distributed them about the houses, so that they may be held in command. Between

nine and ten, your orders came for the men to withdraw. As it was late, and the town was quiet, and there where a number of ladies and women in the house, I thought better to remain where we were. The memorandum was not communicated to all the men, as they were distributed and sleeping in three houses. The town was quiet all night, and the following morning I went down with Mr. Snow to see you, leaving every thing quiet.

As it was Sunday, I told those men who had no houses to go to, to remain quiet till I returned. I did not return that night till twelve o'clock, owing to my horse breaking down. I got into Dr. Schultz's and found that the French had increased in numbers, and the position was assuming an aspect of hostility, and one detrimental to the interests of the cause you were engaged in; and that night ninety-six French left the Fort and entered the town and paraded about. I gave all the men orders on no account to provoke attack. The night past away without any demonstration on the part of the French. On the following morning I assembled the officers of the company, and some others, and communicated your orders, and pointed out the futility of remaining there. That they were acting on their own responsibility, and contrary to your orders. I took the opinion of each one and they all agreed to leave. I accordingly requested Dr. Schultz to take immediate steps to remove his family and the other ladies, and told the officers to let the men either go singly with their arms throughout the day, or if not with their arms, to wait till all was ready, and march out in a body, which I was satisfied could be done with ease, as the French wanted them to leave the premises and nothing more. I told the officers not to give the orders to the men till all was ready, lest it might get out, and a demonstration be made by the French, and as there were a number of females on the premises, they had to be looked after first. I told him to leave as soon as possible, but on no account to be latter than three o'clock. I then left him with Mr. Hallett, to attend a meeting at St. James Parish, and afterwards to drill some companies at Kildonan Parish. I took possession of Mr. Prud'homme's house for the reception of the men, and made a few arrangements. I then made an attempt to get into town again about four o'clock, but could not. I then wrote a letter to you, informing you of the state of affairs, and that I felt a little apprehensive about them, but not much, as I was satisfied if they would retire, they might do so, knowing the French would not fire the first shot. When the position was first assumed it was only to protect the premises and Government property from a comparatively few French, but on Sunday night they appear to have increased greatly. Several men left* on Monday, but were not allowed to return. Of subsequent events you are already in possession. I do not know why they do not leave, after my orders of the morning.

I have, &c.,
C. W. BOULTON.

["N."]

BISHOP'S COURT, December 6th, 1869.

Colonel Dennis.

DEAR COLONEL DENNIS,—I grieve to say that the state of things is assuming daily a graver aspect. I am greatly disappointed at the manifestations of loyalty, and a determination to support the Government of Mr. McDougall, on the part of the English population. Instead of a breaking down of the force of the insurgents, I feel certain, from my observations at Fort Garry to day, and from information from Mr. McTavish and others I can fully rely on, that over 600 men are now in arms, and they are well armed. I see no reason to depend on want of courage or determination on the part of these men. In addition to this strong exhibition of force, there is a belief, apparently on good authority, of a determination to avenge loss of life, if they are attacked by house to house massacring, or at any rate by individual assassination.

I feel, therefore, that success in an attack with such forces as you can bring together, with nothing of the common action the Insurgents have, is very problematical, and that the warfare is likely to be such, that a victory will only be less fatal to the Settlement, and the interest of the Canadian Government than a defeat.

You must not suppose that this comes from one who is timorous; though I never said it

* Supposed from Dr. Schultz's house.

before, I went to the first meeting of the Council of Assiniboine, prepared to recommend a forcible putting down of the insurrection, and when you came in, I hoped that the exhibition of force would be sufficient; but the force of the insurgents has only grown with opposition, and is now, I believe, quite a match for all that can be brought together against them. I would earnestly advise, therefore, the giving up of any idea of attacking the French position at Fort Garry at present, and also any idea of seizing by stealth on any rebel. Put away such counsel for a time, at least. I feel that the result to be anticipated would be very disastrous. I see everything to be gained by delay, at any rate there would be some opportunity, perhaps, of bringing about some direct communication between Governor McDougall and the disaffected people. I think you should, on every account, I bring that about; further, it would be well not to act, till you ascertain clearly the mind of the Canadian Ministry and people on the way of settling this affair; and I think something is due to the people from Governor McDougall. I, for one, am at this moment perfectly ignorant of any detail of the character or policy of his Government. Personally, I do not care for this—I am not only fervently loyal to the Queen, but I have unquestioning confidence in the management of Canada. I know all will be right, still there is not less a great want—a very conciliatory attitude is what is wanted from Governor McDougall, and a plain setting forth of how the Government is to be conducted, meeting, as far as possible, any of the wishes expressed by the disaffected persons, and, perhaps, referring others to Canada, but promising a generous consideration of the whole grievances.

This may not be altogether palatable, but the crisis is a grave one for Canada, and much wisdom is needed. I would not so write, did I not feel certain that if the present numbers of insurgents keep up, an attack is not feasible, and did I not also feel that some attempt should be made by those having authority and knowledge to enter into explanations with them before making any attack.

The late Government of Assiniboine could not do this, for it had no information—all that could be done, was to counsel loyal obedience; but at this time something more is called for than that.

With kindest regards,

I am, &c.,

R. RUPERT'S LAND.

["O."]

BISHOP'S COURT, December 7th, 1869.

DEAR COLONEL DENNIS,—There is a report that you think of coming up at once with the force you have. I do not suppose that this is the case; but I am sure any effort at present is hopeless. They now hold about 60 prisoners, and they are more than 600 in number, and elated. You must be quiet; probably the lives of the prisoners may depend on this—the truth is, I am afraid nothing can be done by you—only evil is now to be apprehended from action.

I am, very sincerely, &c.,

R. RUPERT'S LAND.

DEAR COLONEL DENNIS,—I most fully concur in all the Bishop says.

J. McLEAN, Archdeacon.

["P."]

LOWER FORT GARRY, R. R. SETTLEMENT.

December 9th, 1869.

To All Whom it may Concern.

By certain printed papers of late put in circulation by the French party, communication with the Lieutenant Governor is indicated, with a view to laying before him alleged rights on the part of those now in arms.

I think that course very desirable, and that it would lead to good results.

Under the belief that the French party are sincere in their desire for peace, and feeling that to abandon for the present the call on the loyal to arm, would, in view of such communications, relieve the situation from much embarrassment, and so contribute to bring about peace, and save the country what will otherwise end in universal ruin and devastation. I now call on and order the loyal party in the North-West Territory, to cease from further action under the appeal to arms made by me; and I call on the French party to satisfy the people of their sincerity in wishing for a peaceful ending of all these troubles, by sending a deputation to the Lieutenant Governor at Pembina, without unnecessary delay.

Given under my hand, at the Lower Fort Garry, this 9th day of December, 1869.

J. L. DENNIS,

Lieutenant and Conservator of the Peace
In and for the North-West Territories.

["S."]

To COLONEL DENNIS,—I was at Dease's. I made my commission, and Mr. Dease took the letter, and told me he could not do it, because it was too late, that he could not move without some one behind him to watch what he was after. He would not give any letter. He was afraid that I might be arrested. He told me to tell you that he did not know what to do at this present time. The only thing they decided in their meeting was, that they should keep themselves together, so that the French should not be able to force them, unless by war with their party; and more, that his party did not like to go against the French to fight, but they would never fight against the Government. That is all he told me. He said that he had no news at all.

St. BONIFACE, December 8th, 1869.

Copy.

SERVICE ROLL signed by Red River force, at Stone Fort, Red River Settlement,
N. W. Territories, December 1st, 1869.

Whereas, large bodies of armed men, unlawfully banded together, have, during the last few weeks, committed sundry acts of violence, against the public peace and the protest of the existing authorities.

We, whose names are subscribed hereto, have agreed, and do hereby agree, to enroll ourselves, and to serve under the orders of Lieutenant Colonel Dennis, and the officer or officers he may appoint, while employed in arresting, and putting down, by force of arms, if necessary, the armed parties so unlawfully assembled, and acting as aforesaid; and we do agree to furnish such arms and ammunition as we possess, to be used in the said service.

NAME.	PARISH.	WITNESS TO SIGNATURE.

["B. 8."]

PEMBINA, December 17th, 1869.

Honorable William McDougall, C.B., Lieutenant Governor, &c., &c.

SIR,—I have the honor to report my arrival at this place, on the evening of the 15th instant, having come from Prairie Portage, across the Plains.

Having received, on the evening of the 10th instant, a message from Mr. Sutherland, to say that there was no prospect of getting the French leaders to agree to a meeting, I decided to leave the following day to report to you in person, in accordance with my instructions, and completed the necessary arrangements, engaging a guide, &c., &c.

In informing Mr. Hart as to my intentions, I directed him to pay off Chief "Prince" and his band, the day of my leaving, and vacate the Fort. With regard to the supplies which had been obtained, the provisions, Mr. Hart was given to understand, would be taken and credited in account by the Hudson Bay Company.

All blankets issued were to be collected and stored. The arms and ammunition which had been distributed, where the parties were reliable men, to be allowed to remain in possession, individual receipts being given therefore, as being held subject to Government order. The powder and bullets which had been called in, I directed Mr. Hart to say to the parties from whom obtained, that they were at their service again, not being required by the Government. That if thought safer at the Magazine at the Fort, they could remain there till expedient to be removed.

I directed Mr. Hart to return to the survey upon which he had been previously engaged, advising him not to go beyond the limits of the English portion of the Settlement. At the same time, I fear he may have been interrupted and possibly arrested by the French party.

During the night, a report reached me that a body of Sioux, said to be 500, were on their way to the Settlement, and had gone as far as Poplar Point, bent upon commencing war "upon their own hook."

Believing that matters in the Red River Settlement were sufficiently complicated, without adding in a raid from the Sioux, and fearing that, should the Report have had good foundation, Major Boulton, who left at 4 A.M., on the 10th instant, might not meet the "War Party," as he was to go straight through to the Portage by the "Grosse Isle," I decided to investigate the matter, and, if the Report proved true, to use my best endeavours to turn the Indians back, and thus prevent a calamity, in which, probably, French and English might be involved. I, therefore, left the Fort at 2 A.M., changed horses at the Town of Winnipeg, and drove through, without meeting interruption of any kind, to Poplar Point, arriving at Mr. George Taylor's about 1 P.M.

At Mr. Taylor's, I met Capt. Webb and Mr. Newcombe, actively engaged in connection with the Company, which had its head-quarters at this point.

Captain Webb handed me his Report (see copy herewith, dated 11th December), which he had prepared, and was intended to send off to-day.

I found about 100 lodges of Sioux encamped here, and between here and Prairie Portage. And at the time of my arrival, Major Boulton, who reached this point the evening previous, and had at once acted upon the orders given him, was holding a council with them, at which, "Little Fox," Head Chief of the Cree Nation, was also present.

The report which has reached the Settlement as to the Sioux was entirely without foundation. They asserted themselves as on the Government side, but said they had had no intention of "making war," without being first asked to do so by the Governor.

"Little Fox," who visited me at Mr. Taylor's, after the council, is a man of considerable mind, and may be fully relied on as loyal. He is much respected by both Whites and Indians, and, independent of the control he has over his own people, has a great deal of influence with the Sioux and other tribes of the plains.

Major Boulton, at my request, distributed some presents to the Chiefs, dividing amongst them, also a small supply of provisions.

Wishing to call on the leading people at High Bluff and the Portage, to explain the reason why the movement was to be given up, I continued my journey, and called during the afternoon on some of the principal men at the first-named place, who took part in the address to the Lieutenant-Governor, and who have latterly identified themselves with the volunteer movement.

Mr. Hamilton, M.S.C., under Captain Webb, was zealously drilling the company here, and reported very favourably of the men.

Arrived at the Portage at 6 p.m.

In view of abandoning the call, it is so fortunate that Captain Webb had so far accumulated no surplus supplies. The beef and flour, not more than a barrel or two which was presented to the "Fox" and "Sioux." I gave Captain Webb instructions, similar to those of Mr. Hart, as to blankets, guns, and ammunition.

It was evident that the abandonment of the movement did not meet with much favor in that Settlement; the number of men enrolled, however, were only ninety-nine, and alone would have been insufficient to effect anything of consequence.

The force, altogether organized, and more or less drilled, under my Commission, stands very nearly as follows:—

No.	Head Quarters.	Officers.	Men.	Approximate Days' Drill.
1	Stone Fort.....	3	71	4½
2	St. Andrews.....	3	50	3
3	St. Paul's	3	35	1
4	Kildonan.....	3	74	3½
5	Winnipeg (supposed)...	3	40	No returns either of strength or drill.
6	Poplar Point.....	3	31	4
7	High Bluff.....	3	32	4
8	Portage La Prairie.....	3	36	4
"Chief Prince" and men.....		1	50	10
		25	419	Average 4 days.

Gave Captain Webb instructions, similar to those of Mr. Hart, as to continuing the survey through the present winter. His operations, however, will necessarily be limited to that part of the Settlement from Poplar Point to Prairie Portage.

Finding that a guide could be obtained to take me direct from the Portage to Pembina, I made the necessary arrangements, and left the following morning at 7 a.m.

The trip across the plains occupied more time than expected, the ponies being in many places impeded by crust on the snow. The third day also was stormy, and it was not till the evening of the fourth day that I arrived at my destination.

I have the honor to be, Sir,

Your most obedient servant,

J. S. DENNIS,

Lieutenant-Colonel, &c., &c.

OTTAWA, 19th February, 1870.

The Honorable the Secretary of State for the Provinces, Ottawa.

SIR,—I have the honor to transmit you herewith, the copy of a letter addressed to the Honorable the Minister of Public Works, as to the occupation of a certain portion of my time, while in the North-West Territory, during the past season.

As my connection with late events in that country has, I am led to believe, been misunderstood by many people, I would respectfully ask that the letter referred to may accompany the other papers on this subject, should the latter be sent down to the House of Commons.

I have the honor to be, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

J. S. DENNIS, P.L.S.

OTTAWA, 12th February, 1870.

The Honorable the Minister of Public Works, Ottawa.

SIR,—I have the honor to report to you, as to the occupation of my time in the Red River Territory, during that portion of the past season when not personally present superintending the surveys in progress under my instructions of the 10th July last.

With the exception of conferring with Mr. Hart and Mr. Webb, the surveyors in charge of parties in the field, in the beginning of December, when sent into the Settlement by Mr. McDougall, as to the progress of the work, and giving them instructions for the future, the above period embraces all the time subsequent to the 29th of October.

During this time, my services have been, at his request, given to the Hon. William McDougall, to aid by different means, as suggested by himself, to obtain his admission to the Territory, of which he was sent to administer the government. It may be asked:—

1. Why, when I was sent to the Territory, to take charge of and superintend the surveys, I left my work to go to meet Mr. McDougall at all? And,

2. Why I did not return, having seen that gentleman, and go on with my surveying operations?

I answer as follows:—

I acted entirely from a sense of duty, as the only officer or representative in any way of the Canadian Government, at the time in the Settlement, to prevent, if possible, a threatened outrage on the person of the gentleman sent to the Territory with a Commission as Lieutenant Governor, which sense of duty was enhanced by the fact that, as Minister of Public Works, the same gentleman had, up to that time, given me all my orders; and from him also, as told me by himself, I was to receive all future orders in the event (which, when I left Canada in July, had been spoken of) of his being appointed Lieutenant Governor.

In order to shew the ground for assuming that duty required me to take the above course, I beg to submit the following:—

The outbreak of a portion of the population in the Settlement, having for its ostensible object, the preventing, at all hazards, the honorable gentleman named from entering the Territory, occurred on the 21st October, and was of a character to call forth the liveliest apprehensions as to the personal safety of that gentleman, should he continue his journey north of the boundary line.

The Council of Assiniboine, with members of which I was in daily conference, held several meetings in the emergency, and advised that Mr. McDougall should, if possible, be communicated with, and requested to stop at Pembina, until informed that it would be safe for him to continue his journey to Fort Garry; and, on the meeting of Council, on the 29th October, it was resolved to send Mr. McDougall a despatch to that effect.

I had myself written Mr. McDougall, fully as to the state of affairs, including the affidavit of Mr. Walter S. Hyman, shewing that his (Mr. McDougall's) life might be endangered by his coming on, till advised that the opposition was withdrawn; but, by this time, the party in arms had seized the mails, and subjected all travellers to such a rigid examination that it was very uncertain whether my letters had reached their destination.

It was a time of much excitement. It was evident to me that the Hudson's Bay Company were powerless to deal with the outbreak.

Time was pressing; as Mr. McDougall was expected to reach Pembina at about that date. I was a stranger then, and, under the peculiar circumstances, knew not whom I could safely trust, and I therefore charged myself with the duty of delivering Governor McTavish's despatch, and of advising Mr. McDougall personally as to the impending danger, and further to inform him as to the views and feelings (with which I had made myself acquainted), of the English-speaking people in the Settlement.

The despatch referred to was put into my hands at 10.30 p.m., on the 29th October. On the following morning, at 3 o'clock, I left Fort Garry, and passing the camp of the

malcontents by a detour, rode through to Pembina, meeting Mr. McDougall at the Hudson's Bay Company's Fort there, the morning of the 1st November.

I delivered the despatch, and informed him fully of the situation of affairs, and intended returning again to my office. The horses, my guide, Mr. William Hallett, and myself, had ridden through were, however, so exhausted that it was necessary to allow them two or three days to recruit, and while remaining at the Hudson's Bay Post at Pembina, with that view, an armed party arrived on the 2nd November, despatched from the main body at the River Sale, and ordered me out of the Territory, with Mr. McDougall and party.

My guide, Mr. Hallett, was seized, bound to a cart, and driven off a distance towards Fort Garry.

After a few days I expressed the desire to Mr. McDougall to return to Winnipeg, feeling confident I could get in, in some way; and that, only in my office, and not interfering in any way with the refractory party, I might, probably, be allowed to go on with my duties without being molested.

The honorable gentleman named, however, expressed the wish that I should remain with him, stating that as I knew the character and temper of political parties in the Settlement, he desired to make use of me, and further that he was advised his commission would take effect on the 1st of the ensuing month, and when that time came round, should the malcontents still be in arms, he might require me to aid him in some measure by which his authority would be established.

Under the peculiar harassing circumstances in which Mr. McDougall was placed, I felt it incumbent on me, from every point of view, to comply with his request, and I remained with him till the evening of the 29th November.

During this time I arranged, and kept up through loyal French half-breeds a regular and frequent, though necessarily secret, communication with my office, by which Mr. McDougall was kept advised of events as they transpired in the Settlement, and further, was actively engaged the whole time in endeavouring to contribute to the comfort of that gentleman, his family, and party.

As the month drew to a close, I was informed by him that he had determined to send me through to the Settlement, with a Proclamation to be promulgated there on the 1st December, announcing the transfer of the Territory, and the taking effect of his commission as Lieutenant-Governor; and further, the advices from there at this time going to show that the English-speaking portion of the people had become so fearful as to the ultimate designs of the French party, that they would readily obey any call made upon them with authority to put down the outbreak; he also expressed the intention of giving me full magisterial powers to be used for that object, should I find the temper of the people as above indicated. Mr. McDougall stated his intention, as he said, to give legal effect to the document, to go to the Hudson Bay Post, or some point in British Territory, on the morning of the 1st December, and execute the originals in the presence of Messrs. Provencher and Richards.

Accordingly, in order to arrive at Fort Garry on the 1st December, I left Pembina at 10.30 p.m., on the 29th November; travelled all that night, all the next day, and all the following night, the greater part of the time through the coldest storm experienced by me during the winter, and arrived in the Settlement at 5 a.m. on the day expected.

I made the Proclamation public, and after consulting a number of the prominent residents, finding the people in favor of forcible measures, I took action under the commission issued to me by Mr. McDougall.

As my proceedings in this matter are fully detailed in the report thereon, now in the hands of the Government, it is unnecessary for me to repeat them here; it is sufficient to say that, finding it inexpedient after all to attempt aggressive measures, I returned to Pembina, in accordance with Mr. McDougall's instructions to that effect, arriving there on the 15th of the month. I would only say that during these 15 days (and I may say nights also), I was occupied in a zealous and faithful discharge of what I conceived to be the highest duty I could render to the Government,—that of endeavouring from day to

day, by such means as at the time seemed most likely to effect it, to bring about peace and order in the Colony.

I acted in good faith throughout, not being aware, till I met Colonel De Salaberry on the 23rd December, on the plains, while on my way to Canada, that the Proclamation and Commission had been issued by Mr. McDougall, under a misapprehension of the facts (the transfer of the Territory not having taken place on the 1st December, as supposed), and were worth no more than waste paper.

I may be permitted to say here, that, although I had previously felt mortified and disappointed at not having been able to bring about peace, by means of any kind, on hearing the statement of Colonel De Salaberry, that feeling changed at once to one of heartfelt thankfulness that my proceedings had not been the cause (even to the extent of a drop) of bloodshed among the people.

Mr. McDougall decided to return to Canada, and wished me to return with him; as he said, he thought the information I had acquired in the Settlement might be made available by the Government here; I came away also without hesitation.

We left Pembina on the 18th December. Having met with an accident at Abercrombie, I was detained a few days on the way, arriving finally at Toronto on the 13th instant.

Since my return I have been occupied (that is to say, when able to work, as I was laid up for a fortnight at home from the accident) during the whole time, in preparing the accounts, reports, &c., for the Department.

Trusting that the foregoing statement and explanation may be satisfactory,

I have the honor to be, Sir,

Your obedient servant,

J. S. DENNIS.

DEPARTMENT OF SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES,

OTTAWA, 16th February, 1870.

The Very Reverend the Bishop of St. Boniface.

MY LORD,—I am commanded by His Excellency the Governor General, to acknowledge and thank you for the promptitude with which you placed your services at the disposal of this Government, and undertook a winter voyage and journey, that you might, by your presence and influence, aid in the repression of the unlooked for disturbances which had broken out in the North-West.

I have the honor to enclose for your information:—

1. A copy of the instructions given to the Honorable Wm. McDougall on the 28th September last;
2. A copy of a further letter of instructions addressed to Mr. McDougall on the 7th November;
3. Copy of a letter of instructions to the Very Reverend Vicar General Thibault on the 4th December;
4. Copy of a Proclamation issued by His Excellency the Governor General, addressed to the inhabitants of the North-West Territories, by the express desire of the Queen;
5. Copy of a letter addressed to the Secretary of State, by Donald A. Smith, Esq., of Montreal, on the 24th November;
6. Copy of a letter of instructions addressed by me to Mr. Smith, on 10th December last;
7. A semi-official letter, addressed by the Minister of Justice, on the 3rd January, 1870, to Mr. Smith; also,
8. Copy of the Commission issued to Mr. Smith, on the 17th of January, 1870.

Copies of the Proclamation issued by Mr. McDougall, at or near Pembina, and of the Commission issued to Colonel Dennis, having being printed in the Canadian papers, and widely circulated at the Red River, are, it is assumed, quite within your reach, and are not furnished; but it is important that you should know that the proceedings by which the lives and properties of the people of Rupert's Land were jeopardized for a time, were at once disavowed and condemned by the Government of this Dominion, as you will readily discover in the Despatch addressed by me to Mr. McDougall, on the 24th of December, a copy of which is enclosed.

Your Lordship will perceive, in these papers, the policy which it was and is the desire of the Canadian Government to establish in the North-West. The people of Canada have no interest in the erection of institutions in Rupert's Land which public opinion condemns; nor would they wish to see a fine race of people trained to discontent and insubordination, by the pressure of an unwise system of Government, to which British subjects are unaccustomed or averse. They look hopefully forward to the period when institutions, moulded upon those which the other Provinces enjoy, may be established, and, in the meantime, would deeply regret if the civil and religious liberties of the whole population were not adequately protected by such temporary arrangements as it may be prudent at present to make.

A Convention has been called, and is now sitting at Fort Garry, to collect the views of the people, as to the powers which they may consider it wise for Parliament to confer, and the Local Legislature to assume. When the proceedings of that conference have been received by the Privy Council, you may expect to hear from me again; and, in the meantime, should they be communicated to you on the way, His Excellency will be glad to be favored with any observation that you may have leisure to make.

You are aware that the Very Reverend the Vicar-General Thibault and Messrs. Donald A. Smith and Charles de Salaberry are already in Rupert's Land, charged with a Commission from Government. Enclosed are letters to those gentlemen, of which you will oblige me by taking charge; and I am commanded to express the desire of His Excellency that you will co-operate with them in their well-directed efforts to secure a peaceful solution of the difficulties in the North-West Territories which have caused His Excellency much anxiety, but which, by your joint endeavours, it is hoped may be speedily removed.

I have, &c.,

JOSEPH HOWE.

ADDENDA

TO THE

CORRESPONDENCE AND OTHER PAPERS

CONNECTED WITH RECENT OCCURRENCES IN THE

NORTH WEST TERRITORIES.

The Secretary of State to the Governor General.

(Copy.—CANADA.—No. 7.)

DOWNING STREET, 8th January 1870.

No. 134, Nov. 25th, 1869. SIR,—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your
 „ 147, Dec. 9th, „ despatches noted in the margin, relating to the recent disturbances
 „ 148, „ 11th, „ in the Red River Settlement. In the despatch No. 156 you
 „ 156, „ 17th, „ enclose Copy of the Minute of the Privy Council of Canada,
 „ 154, „ 23rd, „ conveying their views on the present position of the Canadian
 Hudson Bay Company, Government in regard to the transfer of the Hudson Bay
 Dec. 23th, 1869. Company's Territories to Canada. I transmit, for your information,
 Colonial Office, Jan. 8th, 1870. a copy of a letter on this subject, which has been received from the Hudson Bay Company,
 together with a copy of the answer which I have caused to be returned to it.

I observe, with great satisfaction, the anxiety manifested by the Canadian Government to avoid any collision with the Insurgents in the Red River Settlement, and to exhaust all means of explanation and reconciliation before having recourse to force. I entirely agree with your Ministers that bloodshed might lead to the most deplorable consequences, and should not be risked except under the pressure of the most urgent necessity. The illness of Mr. McTavish is much to be lamented, but I have perfect confidence in the Hudson Bay Company, and have no reason to doubt that their Officers in the Territory are animated by an equally friendly spirit with the Company. A statement has appeared in a newspaper report to the effect that Mr. McDougall was enlisting Sioux Indians with the view of employing them against the Insurgents. I do not doubt that this intention was erroneously imputed to Mr. McDougall. If any apprehension on the subject had existed in my mind, it would have been removed by the Minute of the Privy Council.

(Signed,)

I have, &c.,

GRANVILLE.

Governor General,

The Rt. Hon. Sir John Young, Bart., G.C.B., G.C.M.G., &c., &c., &c.

Sir Stafford Northcote to Sir F. Rogers.

(Copy.)

HUDSON'S BAY HOUSE,
LONDON, December 28, 1869.

SIR—I am desired by the Committee of the Hudson's Bay Company, to transmit to you for the information of Earl Granville, copies of the several communications named in the accompanying lists, some of which have been already privately forwarded to his Lordship.

The Committee regret extremely the unfortunate occurrences described by Mr. McTavish. They are most anxious to co-operate with Her Majesty's Government in any measures which Earl Granville may think it expedient to adopt with a view to the restoration of order, and the settlement of the Territory. They sincerely trust that these objects may be attained without the employment of force, and above all without a collision between the different sections of the population of the Red River Settlement, feeling assured that the effects of any such collision would be very disastrous to the prosperity of the Country. At the same time they desire me to express to Earl Granville their conviction that it is most undesirable to leave matters in their present undefined position. The Company's authority which, (as Lord Granville is aware,) has long been exercised under a sense of difficulty, has been greatly weakened by the steps which have been taken for the transfer of the Country to the Dominion of Canada.

A transfer which according to the arrangements publicly and officially announced, ought to have been formerly completed on the 1st instant. On the other hand, the authority of the Dominion has not yet been established; and the announcement that the Dominion Government intend to withhold the purchase money, and therefore of course to abstain from accepting the responsibility of Government until the present troubles are at an end, must naturally deprive their action of any force.

The Committee cannot recognize in the circumstances which have occurred any reason for the Dominion Government delaying the performance of the engagements into which they have entered, under the sanction of Her Majesty's Government with this Company, and they trust that Earl Granville will take measures for giving immediate effect to that engagement, formally placing the Settlement under the charge of the authority which must be responsible for its good government, and at the same time causing the stipulated price of the land to be handed over to the Company.

I have, &c.,
(Signed,) STAFFORD H. NORTHCOTE,
Governor.

Sir F. Rogers, Bart., &c., &c., &c.,
Colonial Office.

Sir Frederic Rogers to Sir Stafford Northcote.

(Copy.)

DOWNING STREET,
8th January, 1870.

SIR,—I am directed by Earl Granville to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 28th of December, relating to the disturbances which have occurred in the Red River Settlement, and urging that the arrangements for the transfer of the Territories may proceed, and the stipulated price be paid over to the Hudson Bay Company without delay.

Lord Granville desires me to inform you, that he has lately received from the Governor General of Canada, a Minute of the Privy Council of the Dominion, conveying

the expression of their views on the present position of the Canadian Government in regard to this question.

In this Minute, the Canadian Government repeat the expression of their desire to acquire the Territory, and of their readiness to perform all the obligations incurred by Canada under the recent arrangements for the completion of the transfer. They urge a temporary delay in proceeding with the transfer, from a conviction of the gravity of the present situation, and not from any desire to repudiate or postpone the performance of any of their engagements. They submit that the Government of the Company, which the inhabitants have been accustomed to respect, should be continued while steps are being taken to remove the misapprehensions which exist, and to reconcile the people to the change.

They point out, that any hasty attempt by the Canadian Government to force their rule on the Insurgents might lead to bloodshed, and sow an ineradicable hatred to the union of the countries, and thus mar the further prosperity of British North America; and they represent that even were the purchase-money paid over to the Company at once it would not the less remain impolitic to put an end to the only existing authority in the Country, and compel Canada to assert her title by force. They inform Lord Granville that they are taking active measures to bring about a happier state of affairs. They have sent, on a mission of peace to the French half-breeds, now in arms, the Very Revd. Mr. Thibault, Vicar-General (who has labored as a clergyman among them for 39 years), and also Colonel de Salaberry, a gentleman well acquainted with the country, and with the manners and feelings of the inhabitants.

They have also sent Mr. Donald A. Smith, the Chief Agent of the Hudson Bay Company, at Montreal, as a Special Commissioner. From his position as an officer of the Company, the Committee anticipate that he will obtain ready access to Fort Garry, and that he will be able to strengthen the hands of Governor McTavish, and arrange with the loyal and well-affected portion of the people for a restoration of order. The Committee express their confident hope that these measures will succeed; but, in the event of failure, the Canadian Government are making preparations for sending a military force in the early spring.

Lord Granville desires me to add that the reasons given by the Canadian Government for delaying the transfer, weighty in themselves, become practically conclusive, when it is considered that Her Majesty's Government, and the Hudson Bay Company, must alike look to that Government for the practical accomplishment of the transfer, and that they appear, in fact, to be conducting it in the spirit which Her Majesty's Government approve, and which is most calculated to avoid that injury to the trade of the Company, which Mr. McTavish anticipated from any violent measures.

Lord Granville, moreover, learns from the law officers of the Crown, that, although it would be competent to Her Majesty's Government to complete the transfer by accepting the surrender of the Company, and issuing the requisite Order in Council; yet this acceptance would not place the Company in a position to obtain, by any legal process, the sum of £300,000 recently deposited by Mr. Rose for the purpose of being available for their payment; and considering that even after the surrender is completed questions may possibly arise, or further arrangements may have to be made, between the Hudson Bay Company and the Canadian Government, His Lordship believes that a short delay in the completion of the Contract, however in itself inconvenient, may be more than compensated by ensuring that the surrender is finally effected with the full consent and agreement of both parties interested.

I am, &c.,

(Signed)

F. ROGERS.

The Right Honorable Sir Stafford R. Northcote, Bart., &c.

(Copy.)

List of enclosures referred to in Sir Stafford Northcote's letter to Sir F. Rogers, dated London, 28th December, 1869, and transmitted in Earl Granville's despatch to Sir John Young, No. 7, January 8, 1870.

Extract of a letter from Governor McTavish to the Secretary of the Hudson Bay Company, dated Fort Garry, Red River, 2nd November, 1869.

Copy of a letter from Governor McTavish, dated 9th November, 1869.

Extract of a letter from Governor McTavish, dated 23rd November, 1869, with a copy of his * Proclamation to the inhabitants of Red River Settlement.

List of documents left at the Colonial Office by Sir Curtis Lampson.

Extract of a letter from Governor McTavish to the Secretary of the Hudson Bay Company, dated Fort Garry, Red River, 16th November, 1869.

Copy of Minutes of Council of Assiniboine, held 25th October, 1869.

Minutes, ditto, 30th October, 1869.

Received from Government in despatch No. 139, dated Fort Garry, 30th October, 1869.
 Nov. 27, 1869.

Letter from Governor McTavish to the Honorable Wm. McDougall,

Received in ditto.
 Pembina, the 2nd and 4th November, 1869.

Letter from the Honorable Wm. McDougall to Mr. McTavish, dated

Received from Government in No. 147, Dec. 9, 1869.
 1869.

Copy, Reply by the letter dated Fort Garry, 9th November,

Extract of letter from Governor McTavish to W. G. Smith, Secretary of the Hudson Bay Company, dated Fort Garry, Red River, 2nd November, 1869.

There has been, during the Autumn, considerable agitation among the Canadian half-breed population here regarding the Government to be established here. They seem to have been fully, if not correctly, informed of how the Government was to be composed, and they seemed to think that, from what was told, their interests would be overlooked, and their religion interfered with; but it appears as if the course they meant to take was to wait the arrival of the Honorable Wm. McDougall, who they understood was coming here as Governor, and then endeavour to make such arrangements with him as would secure their rights and interests. But about twelve days ago a party of French half-breeds took possession of the road to Pembina, erected barriers at intervals, the headquarters of the movement being at a spot named St. Norbert, about nine miles from Fort Garry. Their declared object was to interrupt the march of Mr. McDougall, and, to use their own expression, "to turn him back."

At a meeting of the Council of Assiniboine, held on the 25th ultimo, the question of the best means to be used in the emergency was fully debated. Messrs. Bruce and Riel, the heads of the French movement, were present, and the Council used all the arguments in their power to induce them to forego their designs of opposing the entrance of Mr. McDougall. They were, however, unavailing.

After proper consideration the Council agreed that, for various reasons, it would be unwise either to enroll a force of special constables, or call out a counter demonstration of the inhabitants favorable to Mr. McDougall.

I, however, communicated with the latter gentleman, acquainting him with the state of public feeling, and leaving it to his discretion to act as he might see fit.

Yesterday I was informed that Mr. Provencher, an official on the staff of the new Government, had been stopped at Saint Norbert, and forced to return to Pembina.

* Proclamation received from Governor in despatch, No. 147, 9th December, 1869.

along with Captain Cameron, R. A., who had arrived at the barrier a few hours after the former.

Governor McDougall, himself, had arrived at Pembina on the evening of the 30th ultimo. A party consisting of less than fifty half-breeds, have come to meet him there. He ought, on the evening of the 31st, to have received a letter from me, copy of which I enclose, forwarded express per Colonel Dennis, who was to travel by an indirect route.

As I close this letter, a party of one hundred of the malcontents have arrived and taken armed possession of Fort Garry, under pretext of defending it, as, from information in his possession, Mr. Riel alleges it is in danger: guards are posted at each gate and parade the platforms. They give assurances that nothing will be touched, and nothing taken. For what provisions they require, they offer to pay in the name of the Council of Republic of the half-breeds.

About four hundred men continue on guard at Saint Norbert. Outgoing and incoming mails are subjected to examination.

Mr. McTavish to Mr. Smith.

Fort Garry, Red River, 9th November, 1869.

SIR.—I have the honor to inform you, that I yesterday heard from the Honorable William McDougall, in reply to my letter to him, copy of which was sent you with my letter of 2nd instant. A copy of his letters will be sent you hereafter, in the meantime, I may say, that Mr. McDougall does not seem to think I have acted energetically in the matter, and reminds me, very pointedly, that at present I am responsible for the peace of the country.

He mentions that on receiving at Pembina an intimation that he was not to proceed to the Settlement, he had gone to the Company's establishment at Pembina, where he remained till he was ordered to withdraw within American territory, by an armed band of half-breed horsemen, and that, in consequence, he was, when he wrote me, camped on American Territory, where he would remain till he heard from me the result of the efforts made here to open the road to the settlement, or till I informed him that I considered his remaining longer at Pembina useless, which is, in my opinion, a point on which I cannot advise Mr. McDougall, though I feel convinced that at present his entry into this settlement would lead to more serious difficulties than those to which we are at present exposed. Mr. McDougall refers to military and other arrangements, which arise out of the outrage to which he has been subjected

Here matters remain much as they were. The Committee seem to be in constant session, but nothing is heard of them till their Secretary, Louis Riel, issues his manifestoes, "by order." The idea of their organization seems to have been taken from the place used to distribute the relief supplies last winter, each Canadian parish having sent a delegate to form the Central Committee, and in an invitation issued this morning to the Protestant part of the community, delegates are requested to meet the twelve members of the Committee already formed from the Roman Catholic parishes in Council. Here the same plan is adhered to, and the Protestant parishes are named; the object of the proposed meeting being, "since the invader is driven from our soil" to consult on the state of the country and the government to be adopted. The position is undoubtedly serious, and the case will require very careful handling, as any collision between parties will lead to the plain Indians being brought down on the settlement next spring, as well as disturbances over all the plain districts, which will not be put down for years, long before which the whole business of the country will have been destroyed.

I have, &c,

(Signed,)

W. MCTAVISH.

William Gregory Smith, Esq.,
Secretary, Hudson Bay House, London.

EXTRACT of letter from Governor McTavish, to W. G. Smith, Esq., Secretary, dated Fort Garry, Red River, 23rd November, 1869.

Since I last wrote you the delegates from the parishes in the settlement have had several meetings, and are again assembled to-day. Up to yesterday evening, the only point made out was, that the French party declared that Mr. McDougall could only be brought into the settlement over their dead bodies, and this was said in reply to a proposal on the part of the English delegates, that Mr. McDougall should come in after making some concessions as regarded the representation of the people in his Council. It is expected that some conclusion will be arrived at to-day, but I rather think the French party will only agree to the appointment of a provisional government.

“Early this morning, Louis Riel, the leader of the French half-breeds, requested Mr. John H. McTavish, the accountant here, to come over to the office, and on Mr. McTavish going there, Riel, accompanied by a number of armed men, called on him to give up the public accounts. This he refused to do, on which Riel told him he would be compelled by force to do so. It ended in Riel taking possession of the Land Register, the book in which the account of the Governor and Council of Assiniboine with the fur trade was kept, and the cash blotter, no doubt with a view to making out the balance of the colonial public funds with the fur trade, for the purpose of demanding it to be paid over.”

“Riel was careful to let Mr. McTavish understand that there was not only no desire to meddle with private funds, but every desire to respect them; but how far this resolution will be carried out, it is very difficult to say, though at the time it was made, I have no doubt it was sincere.”

“I have not, since writing you, heard directly from Mr. McDougall, but he is still at Pembina. I enclose Copy of Proclamation issued by me to the people of Red River.”

Copy.

Minutes of a meeting of the Governor and Council of Assiniboine, held in the Court Room of Assiniboine, on Monday, the 25th October, 1869, at which the following members were present; viz:—

John Black, Acting Governor, President.	
Right Reverend the Lord Bishop of Rupert's Land, Councillor.	
Wm. Cowan, Esq., M.D.,	“
Doctor Bird,	“
Thomas Brown Esq.,	“
Wm. Fraser, Esq.,	“
John Sutherland, Esq.,	“

Mr. Black stated, that in consequence as he very much regretted to say of Governor McTavish's continued illness, he was again called upon to preside at the present meeting of the Council.

The Minutes of the late meeting having been read and approved, Mr. Black proceeded to say that at their last meeting, as the Council was aware, an address had been prepared for the purpose of being presented to the Honorable Wm. McDougall, on his arrival in the Settlement, an event which was expected to take place at some very early date; that the Council, while preparing that address, were impressed with the conviction that the feelings of welcome and loyalty therein expressed, were concurred in by the Settlement generally, or, at least, were so far shared by the great majority of the people as to preclude all idea of open demonstration of dissent; but he was much concerned now to say that unhappily, such was not the case, and that a large party among the French population appeared to be animated by a very different spirit. It had become too evident that among

them, sentiments of a directly opposite nature prevailed with regard to the impending change in the Government of the country, and prevailed so strongly that, according to information lately received, and of the correctness of which there could be no doubt, they had organized themselves into armed bodies for the purpose of intercepting Mr. McDougall on the road between this and Pembina, with the openly-avowed intention of preventing his entrance into the Settlement. It was to consider that serious state of matters that the council had been assembled, and to see whether any, and what measures could be adopted to prevent the threatened outrage.

The Council unanimously expressed their indignant reprobation of the outrageous proceedings referred to by the President, but feeling strongly impressed with the idea that the parties concerned in them must be acting in utter forgetfulness, or even, perhaps, ignorance of the highly criminal character of their actions, and of the very serious consequences they involved; it was thought that by calm reasoning and advice they might be induced to abandon their dangerous schemes, before they had irretrievably committed themselves. With this object in view, therefore, Mr. Riel and Mr. Bruce who are known to hold leading positions in the party opposed to Mr. McDougall, had been invited to be present at this meeting of the Council, and on being questioned by the Council as to the motives and intentions of the party they represented, Mr. Riel, who alone addressed the Council on the occasion, substantially said, in the course of a long and somewhat irregular discussion, that his party were perfectly satisfied with the present Government, and wanted no other; that they objected to any Governor coming from Canada without their being consulted in the matter; that they would never admit any governor, no matter by whom he might be appointed, if not by the Hudson Bay Company, unless delegates were previously sent, with whom they might negotiate as to the terms and conditions under which they would acknowledge him; that they were uneducated and only half civilized, and felt if a large immigration were to take place they would probably be crowded out of a country which they claimed as their own; that they knew that they were, in a sense, poor and insignificant, but that it was just because they were aware of their insignificance that they had felt so much at being treated as if they were more insignificant than they in reality were; that their existence, or, at least, their wishes had been entirely ignored; that if Mr. McDougall were once here, most probably the English speaking population would allow him to be installed in office as Governor, and then he would be "our Master or King, as he says," and that therefore they intended to send him back; that they consider that they are acting not only for their own good, but for the good of the whole Settlement, that they did not feel that they were breaking any law, but were simply acting in defence of their own liberty, and that they were determined to prevent Mr. McDougall from coming into the Settlement at all hazards.

The Council endeavoured to convince Mr. Riel of the erroneous nature of the views held by himself and the party he represented, explained the highly criminal character of their proceedings, and pointed out the very disastrous consequences which might accrue, not only to themselves, but to the Settlement generally, if they persisted in their present course. He was earnestly advised to exercise his influence with his party in dissuading them from attempting to molest Mr. McDougall in any way, and inducing them to return peaceably to their homes, assuring him that, sooner or later, heavy retribution would fall upon them, if they carried their plans into execution.

Mr. Riel, however, refused to adopt the views of the Council, and obstinately persisted in expressing his determination to oppose Mr. McDougall's entrance into the Settlement, declining even to press the reasoning and advice of the Council upon his party, altho' he reluctantly promised to repeat to them what he had just heard, and inform Governor McTavish of the result by Thursday at 11 o'clock.

Mr. Riel and Mr. Bruce having retired, the Council resumed the consideration of the subject before them, and the expediency of calling out an armed force to meet and protect Mr. McDougall was suggested, but as it was seen that it would be from the English speaking part of the community that such a force, if forthcoming at all, would be chiefly drawn, the result would evidently be, to bring into armed collision, sections of the people,

who, although they have hitherto lived together in comparative harmony, yet differed from each other so widely in point of race, of language and religion, as well as general habits, that the commencement of actual hostilities between them would probably involve not only themselves, but the surrounding Indians, in a sanguinary and protracted struggle; and the Council therefore felt that without a regular military force to fall back upon, they could hardly be held justified, under almost any circumstances, in resorting to an experiment so full of possible mischief to the whole Country.

The Council at length, having heard that a number of the more intelligent and influential among the French were not implicated in the hostile movement against Mr. McDougall, adopted the following resolution, which was moved by Mr. Bannatyne and seconded by Mr. McBeath :

“ That Messrs. Dease and Goulet be appointed immediately to collect as many of the more respectable of the French community as they could, and with them proceed to the camp of the party who intend to intercept Governor McDougall, and endeavour, if possible, to procure their peaceable dispersion, and that Mr. Dease report to Mr. McTavish, on or before Thursday next, as to their success or otherwise.”

The Council then adjourned.

(Copy.)

MINUTES of a Meeting of the Governor and Council of Assiniboine, held on the 30th October, 1869, at which the following Members were present :—

John Black, Esq., Acting Governor, President.	
The Rt. Rev'd. the Lord Bishop of Rupert Land, Councillor.	
Dr. Cowan,	do
A. G. B. Bannatyne, Esq.,	do
Dr. Bird,	do
Jchn Sutherland, Esq.,	do
Wm. Fraser, Esq.,	do

The President referring to the decision they had come to at the last Council as to Mr. Dease proceeding with a number of his countrymen to the locality where were assembled the people who have been threatening to intercept the Honorable Mr. McDougall on his way to the Settlement, informed the Council that Mr. Dease's mission had entirely failed in producing the desired result, not only had that and every other effort of a conciliatory character proved fruitless in procuring the peaceable dispersion of the assemblage of malcontents, but they appeared to be even more fully bent upon their purpose. In these circumstances, and under the impression that Mr. McDougall had in all probability reached Pembina, the Governor believed that the time had fully come for entering into communication with Mr. McDougall on the subject, and in order that no time might be lost, should the Council see fit to coincide in that view of the matter, the President submitted for consideration the draft of a letter from Governor McTavish in the name of the Council.

After an earnest and careful consideration of the present position of affairs, the Council, on the motion of the Bishop of Rupert's Land, seconded by Mr. Sutherland :

Resolved—That in their opinion, a letter should immediately be sent to Mr. McDougall, in accordance with the draft that had been agreed upon.

(Copy.)

EXTRACT of a Letter from Governor Mc. Tavish to W. G. Smith, Esq., Secretary, dated Fort Garry, Red River, 16th November, 1869.

"Since last writing you on the 9th inst., I regret to say that there has been no improvement in the state of matters here. A body of armed Canadian half-breeds under the orders of their leader, Louis Riel, still occupy this establishment, and though the men generally are quiet and orderly, and evidently unwilling to give offence, it appears to me that Riel himself is not inclined to be so civil. A larger body of the same people still guard the highway to Pembina, at La Rivière Sale, about ten miles above the Forks on the Red River, determined that neither Mr. McDougall nor any member of his staff will get into the Settlement. Mr. McDougall still remains on the American side of the Frontier at Pembina, awaiting the course of events."

"Louis Riel yesterday sent me, on the part of the French speaking section of the population, but signed only by himself, a protest against the Hudson Bay Company maintaining near the boundary line of the Territory, the Honorable Wm. McDougall, and informing me that the "Company's properties in this country would be security for any troubles arising from Mr. McDougall remaining there. This, with a demand for the keys of the two bastions, containing some muskets, which he made to chief trader Cowan, some nights previously, would seem to show that he, at least, would proceed to considerable lengths; and I have no doubt that, if any hostile collision takes place, the Company's property elsewhere, as well as here, is in very great danger: until that takes place, or that it is clearly seen that the disturbance is to be put down by force. I think hesitation on the part of the people will prevent any very extreme proceedings, even if the leaders wished for them, which, as there seems to be at least one Fenian in the movement, and he is evidently in close intimacy with Riel, may very well be the case."

"The person in question is a Mr. O'Donoghue, who came here a two years ago as a schoolmaster for the Roman Catholic Mission, and who for the last year has worn the *soutane*, and given out that he was preparing for the priesthood, but who has, since the outbreak, thrown off his dress and fairly joined the malcontents, and, as I am informed made them believe he can procure for them Fenian assistance."

"The leaders of the French half-breeds had some time ago invited the Protestant Parishes in the Settlement, to send Delegates to meet those from the Roman Catholic Parishes, which was done, and the delegates have met to-day to consider the state of the country. Some are sanguine that this may end in some arrangement, by which Mr. McDougall may be allowed to come in here in safety, but I fear this will not be agreed to by the French half-breeds on any conditions."

"However, I took the opportunity to send to the meeting an address to the people of Red River, showing the state of matters, and protesting against the actions of the malcontents. This I did, more to satisfy Mr. McDougall, and most of the members of the Council of Assiniboine, than from any hope that any good can come of it, in so far as it concerns those whose acts are objected to."

"I forward herewith, for the information of the Governor and Committee, copies of various documents having reference to the troubles here, and to which I have referred at various times in my correspondence, a list of which is enclosed."

TELEGRAM.

Sir John Young to Lord Granville.

OTTAWA, November 23rd, 1869.

Mr. McDougall, designated Lieutenant Governor of North-West Territory, after transfer, is stopped on the way to Fort Garry by small armed force of insurgent half-

breeds. The Hudson Bay Company authorities, in whom Government still rests, are seemingly powerless and inactive. Half-breeds have appointed Provisional Committee of Government. John Bruce, president. Governor McTavish very ill, said to be dying.

TELEGRAM.

To Lord Granville.

OTTAWA, November 26th, 1869.

Your Telegram received and considered by Privy Council.

On surrender by Company to Queen, the Government of Company ceases. The responsibility of administration of affairs will then rest on Imperial Government. Canada cannot accept transfer unless quiet possession can be given. Anarchy will follow. Rebels have taken possession of Fort Garry, and it is said are using the stores of Company. A change of feeling is hoped for, and till then the governing power should remain with present authorities. My advisers think Proclamation should be postponed. Mr. McDougall will remain near Frontier, waiting favorable opportunity for peaceable ingress. Parties having influence with Indians and half-breeds are proceeding to join McDougall.

(Signed,)

JOHN YOUNG.

(Copy.—CANADA.—No. 214.)

DOWNING STREET,

30th November, 1869.

SIR,—I have received, with much regret, your telegraphs of the 23rd and 27th instant, informing me that disturbances had occurred in the Red River Settlement, and that Canada cannot accept the transfer of the Territories, hitherto occupied by the Hudson Bay Company, unless quiet possession can be given.

It becomes necessary, under these circumstances, to recall to you the state of this question.

Although Her Majesty's Government have long desired that the title of the Hudson Bay Company to these Territories should be extinguished, yet this extinction has been uniformly pressed forward by and in the interests of Canada.

On the 11th November, 1864, a Committee of the Executive Council of Canada, expressed themselves "more than ever impressed with the importance of opening up to settlement and cultivation the lands lying between Lake Superior and the Rocky Mountains," and expressed the opinion that the first step towards settlement was the extinction of all claim by the Hudson Bay Company to proprietary rights in the soil or exclusive right of trade.

By Mr. Cardwell's despatch of the 17th June, 1866, it appears that the Minister of the then Province of Canada, desired that the North-West Territory should be made over to that Province, and undertook to negotiate with the Company for the termination of their rights.

On the 22nd of June, 1866, the Executive Council of Canada, expressed the opinion that the most inviting parts of the Territory would shortly be peopled by persons whom the Company were unable to control, and who would establish a Government and Tribunals of their own, and assert their political independence; that such a community would cut British North America in two, and retard or prevent their communication by Railway, and, therefore, that "the future interests of Canada and all British North America were vitally concerned in the immediate establishment of a strong Government there, and in its settlement as a part of the British Colonial System."

They express their conviction that the Confederate Government and Legislature will

feel it to be one of their first duties to open negotiations with the Company for the transfer of their claims to the Territory, which, but for the approach of Confederation they would themselves have done. And meantime they pray Her Majesty's Government to discountenance and prevent any such sales of any portion of the Territory as had then been proposed to its existing proprietors.

By the Act of Parliament which effected Confederation, the Queen was authorized on certain terms to annex these Territories to the Dominion. These powers the Canadian Parliament prayed Her to exercise. Her Majesty's Government were unable to concur in the terms on which the transfer was proposed to be made; but after prolonged negotiations and the passing of a second Act of Parliament, fresh terms were agreed upon between the Hudson Bay Company and the representatives of the Colony, and were embodied in a second address from the Canadian Parliament, the other requisite arguments have been prepared, and the Canadian Government itself has named first, the 1st October, and next, the 1st of December, for the completion of the transfer. Meanwhile the Company have been informed by the Agents of the Canadian Government, (Messrs. Baring and Glyn,) that the indemnity of £300,000 will be paid on due proof of the completion of their surrender.

Throughout these negotiations it has never been hinted that the Company is to be bound to hand over its Territory in a state of tranquillity. Rather its inability to secure that tranquillity, and the dangers resulting from that inability to the neighbouring colony, is taken for granted as a reason why its responsibilities should be adopted by Canada.

This being the state of the case, the Canadian Government, in anticipation of the transfer, now agreed on by all parties, undertook certain operations in respect of land, subject in the first instance to a faint protest from the Company, and directed the future Lieutenant-Governor to enter the Territory. The result, unfortunately, has not met the expectations of the Colonial Government.

Mr. McDougall was met, it appears, by armed resistance, and the disturbances caused by his presence seem to have resulted in the plunder of the Company's stores, and the occupation of Fort Garry by the insurgent portion of the population.

But the Canadian Government having, by this measure, given an occasion to an outburst of violence in a Territory which they have engaged to take over, now appear to claim the right of postponing indefinitely the completion of their engagements to the Company, and of imposing on Her Majesty's Government the responsibility of putting down the resistance which has thus arisen.

This, at least, I understand from the passages "on surrender by the Company to the Queen of Great Britain, the Government of the Company ceases," and "Canada cannot accept the transfer unless quiet possession can be given."

You will, however, perceive on referring to the Act of Parliament, 31 and 32 Vict., cap 105, that if, on the one hand, the Parliament of Canada embodies in an address the terms on which they are prepared to receive Rupert's Land into the Dominion; and if, on the other hand, the Company surrenders their Territory on terms agreed on with Her Majesty, it merely remains for Her Majesty first, by acceptance of the surrender, and next, by Order in Council, to give effect to the arrangement thus agreed to by both parties; and it is provided that the surrender of the Territory becomes null and void, unless within a month of its acceptance by the Queen, Rupert's Land is, by such Order in Council, admitted into the Dominion of Canada.

You will see therefore, that it is impossible for Her Majesty to accept the surrender of the Hudson Bay Company's Territory unless it is certain within a month to be transferred to Canada.

Unless therefore, it is to be so transferred, it must remain under the jurisdiction of the Company, and liable to all the disorders which are to be expected when the prestige of a Government, long known to be inadequate, is shaken by the knowledge that it is also expiring, and by the appearance, however well intended, of its successor. This is not a state of things in which Her Majesty's Government ought to acquiesce, if they have the power of preventing it.

The British Government, is, by the Act of Parliament, practically invested with the power, and therefore the duty of giving effect to what has been deliberately agreed upon between the Company and the Colony. If after all that has passed, the Company present their surrender and claim its acceptance by Her Majesty as a means of enabling them to enforce obligations, which it is too late to repudiate, and for the fulfilment of which, the Canadian Government has itself fixed a time; I do not see how it is possible for Her Majesty's Government to reject their application on the grounds put forward by your Ministers.

I am glad to see that they are doing what they can to assist in the restoration of order, and I should not have been surprised to learn that, while completing the transaction practically, as between themselves and the Company, they were desirous of choosing their own moment for a public announcement of the change of jurisdiction.

But while Her Majesty's Government would have been ready to acquiesce in any such short postponement of the formal Act of transfer, they do not feel that they are at liberty to treat the transaction as capable of being re-opened, or that they can refuse an application from the Company to complete a transfer which appears to them, not merely the only means of providing for the restoration of order, but also to be due as a matter of mere justice to one of the parties.

Her Majesty's Government have reason to believe, that the Hudson Bay Company feel it to be their interest, and it is their wish, to assist to the extent of their power the Government of the Dominion, and I have to instruct you to impress strongly upon your Ministers, the anxious desire of Her Majesty's Government to make the authority of the Queen available in their support.

I have the honor to be, Sir,

Your most obedient humble servant,

GRANVILLE.

Governor General

The Rt. Hon. Sir JOHN YOUNG, Bart., G.C.B., G.C.M.G., &c., &c., &c.

Copy of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, dated the 16th December, 1869.

The Committee of Council have had before them the despatch of the Right Hon. the Secretary of State for the Colonies of the 30th ultimo, on the subject of the two telegrams sent by Your Excellency, on the 23rd and 27th ultimo, to the Colonial Office, on the subject of the disturbances in the Red River Settlement.

The Committee readily acknowledge the correctness of the narrative in the despatch of the proceedings which resulted in the final arrangements for the transfer of the North-Western Territory to Canada.

The circumstances which created the desire of the Government and people of Canada to acquire that country, have been so often and so recently stated, that they do not seem to require reiteration. It was alike the interest of Her Majesty's Government, Canada, and the Hudson Bay Company, that the transfer should be made. Canada still desires to acquire the Territory, and is quite ready to perform all the obligations that she has incurred under the recent arrangements made with Her Majesty's Government and the Company for the completion of the transfer.

At the same time, it would seem clear that if Canada is bound to accept the transfer of the Territory, the Company is equally bound to make it. It surely was never contemplated by any of the parties engaged in the negotiations that the transfer was to be a mere interchange of instruments. It must, from the nature of things, have been understood

by all parties, that the surrender by the Company to the Queen, and the transfer by Her Majesty to the Dominion, was not to be one of title only. The Company was to convey not only their rights under the charter, but the Territory itself of which it was in possession, and the Territory so conveyed was to be transferred by Her Majesty to Canada.

That there would be an armed resistance by the inhabitants to the transfer was, it is to be presumed, unexpected by all parties; it certainly was so by the Canadian Government.

In this regard, the Company cannot be acquitted of all blame. They had an old and fully organized Government in the Country, to which the people appeared to render ready obedience. Their Governor was advised by Council, in which some of the leading residents had seats. They had every means of information as to the state of feeling existing in the Country.

They knew, or ought to have known, the light in which the proposed negotiations were viewed by the people under their rule. If they were aware of the feeling of discontent, they ought frankly to have stated it to the Imperial and Canadian Governments. If they were ignorant of the discontent, the responsibility of such wilful blindness on the part of their officers must rest upon them.

For more than a year these negotiations have been actively proceeded with, and it was the duty of the Company to have prepared the people under its rule for the change—to have explained the precautions taken to protect the interests of the inhabitants, and to have removed any misapprehensions that may have existed among them.

It appears that no steps of any kind, in that direction, were taken. The people have been led to suppose that they have been sold to Canada, with an utter disregard of their rights and position.

When Governor McTavish visited Canada in June last, he was in communication with the Canadian Government, and he never intimated that he had even a suspicion of discontent existing, nor did he make any suggestions as to the best mode of effecting the proposed change, with the assent of the inhabitants.

Lord Granville states that "Throughout these negotiations, it has never been hinted that the Company is to be bound to hand over its Territory in a state of tranquillity. Rather its inability to secure that tranquillity, and the dangers resulting from that inability to the neighbouring Colony, is taken for granted as a reason why its responsibilities should be adopted by Canada." Now the obvious reason why no express stipulation to that effect was made was, that it was assumed, by all parties, that the Company had both the right and the power to hand over the Territory. It was in a state of tranquillity, and no suggestion was made of the possibility of such tranquillity being disturbed. Canada did not allege, nor did the Company admit any inability, on the part of the latter to secure the tranquillity of the country in its present condition.

It is true that Canada had pointed out that in the future, with the population of the United States rapidly pressing forward towards the boundaries of the North-West Territory, such pressure would soon overflow into British Territory, and that the Company would, in such case, be unable to govern or control the large and alien population which might then take possession of the fertile country along the frontier.

But this state of things has not yet arisen, and the resistance comes not from any strangers or new comers, but from those born and brought up under the Government of the Company, and who have hitherto yielded it a willing allegiance.

These statements are not made as a matter of complaint against the Company, but, simply as a justification of the course taken by the Canadian Government, which is observed upon in the despatch. That course has been governed solely by a desire to carry out the transfer under the arrangement in the quietest and best manner possible; and in a way that will not leave behind it any cause for discontent or disquiet in the future.

The resistance of these misguided people is evidently not against the Sovereignty of Her Majesty or the Government of the Hudson Bay Company, but to the assumption of the Government by Canada.

They profess themselves satisfied to remain as they are, and that if the present system of Government were allowed to continue, they would at once disperse to their homes.

It is obvious then that the wisest course to pursue is, for the present, to continue the authority of the Company, which the insurgents affect to respect, while steps are being taken to remove the misapprehensions which exist, and to reconcile the people to the change.

Any hasty attempt by the Canadian Government to force their rule upon the insurgents would probably result in armed resistance and bloodshed. Every other course should be tried before resort is had to force. If life were once lost in an encounter between a Canadian force and the inhabitants, the seeds of hostility to Canada and Canadian rule would be sown, and might create an ineradicable hatred to the union of the countries, and thus mar the future prosperity of British America.

If any thing like hostilities should commence, the temptation to the wild Indian Tribes, and to the restless adventurers who abound in the United States, (many of them with military experience gained in the late civil war,) to join the insurgents would be almost irresistible. Already it is said that the Fenian Organization look upon this rising as another means of exhibiting their hatred to England.

No one can foresee the end of the complications that might thus be occasioned, not only as between Canada and the North-West, but between the United States and England.

From a sincere conviction of the gravity of the situation, and not from any desire to repudiate or postpone the performance of any of their engagements, the Canadian Government have urged a temporary delay of the transfer.

This is not a question of money—it may be one of peace or war. It is one in which the present and future prosperity of the British possessions in North America is involved, which prosperity, hasty action might permanently prejudice.

Even were the £300,000 paid over, the impolicy of putting an end to the only constituted authority existing in the country and compelling Canada to assert her title by force would remain.

It is better to have the semblance of a Government in the Country than none at all. While the issue of the Proclamation would put an end to the Government of the Hudson Bay Company, it would not substitute Government by Canada therefor. Such a Government is physically impossible until the armed resistance is ended, and thus a state of anarchy and confusion would ensue, and a legal status might be given to any Government *de facto*, formed by the inhabitants for the protection of their lives and property.

On a review of the whole circumstances, the Committee would recommend that your Excellency should urge upon Her Majesty's Government the expediency of allowing matters to remain as they are until quiet is restored, or, in case of failure of all effort to do so, the time should have arrived when it is possible to enter the Country in force, and compel obedience to Her Majesty's Proclamation and authority.

As by the terms of the late Act, the surrender to the Queen must be followed, within a month, by Her Majesty's Order in Council, admitting Rupert's Land into the Dominion of Canada, the proper course seems to be that the surrender itself should be postponed, and that the purchase money should remain on deposit meanwhile.

The Committee would also request your Excellency to assure Lord Granville, that the Government here have taken, and are taking active measures to bring about a happier state of affairs.

They have sent on a mission of peace to the French half-breeds now in arms, the very Reverend Mr. Thibault, Vicar General (who has laboured as a clergyman among them for thirty-nine years) accompanied by Colonel de Salabery, a gentleman well acquainted with the country, and with the manners and feelings of the inhabitants. These gentlemen are fully informed of the beneficent intentions of the Canadian Government, and can disabuse the minds of the people of the misrepresentations made by designing foreigners.

They have also sent Mr. Donald A. Smith, the Chief Agent of the Hudson Bay Company at Montreal, as a Special Commissioner. From his position as an officer of the Company, he is likely to obtain ready access to Fort Garry, where he can strengthen the hands of Governor McTavish (now weakened by long illness, and arrange with the loyal and well-affected portion of the people for a restoration of order.

It is confidently hoped that the measures taken will succeed, but in the event of failure, the Government are making preparations, by the construction of boats, and otherwise, for sending a military force in early spring. In these efforts the Canadian Government are glad to believe that they will have the hearty co-operation of Her Majesty's Government, and the Hudson Bay Company.

(Signed,)

JOHN A. MACDONALD.

16th December, 1869.

COPY of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 14th May, 1869.

The Committee, have had under consideration the accompanying Report and Correspondence of the Delegates appointed by Orders in Council, of 1st October last, to proceed to England, to negotiate the terms for the acquisition by Canada of Rupert's Land, and the North-West Territory, and they humbly advise, that the said Report, and the terms agreed upon, as set forth in the said Report and Correspondence, be approved by your Excellency, and submitted for the consideration and sanction of Parliament.

(Certified.)

W. H. LEE,

Clerk P. C.

REPORT OF DELEGATES APPOINTED TO NEGOTIATE FOR THE ACQUISITION OF RUPERT'S LAND AND THE NORTH-WEST TERRITORY.

To His Excellency the Right Honorable Sir John Young, Bart., C.C.B., G.C.M.G., Governor General of Canada.

MAY IT PLEASE YOUR EXCELLENCY.—We have the honor to submit for Your Excellency's consideration, the following Report of our negotiations with Her Majesty's Imperial Government, for the transfer to the Dominion of Canada, of Rupert's Land and the North Western Territory.

Under the authority of an Order in Council of the 1st of October, 1868, we were appointed a delegation, to England, to arrange the "terms for the acquisition by Canada, "of Rupert's Land," and "by another Order in Council of the same date, we were "authorised to arrange for the admission of the North-West Territory into union with "Canada, either with or without Rupert's Land, as may be found practicable and "expedient. We proceeded at once to execute the important mission confided to us, and on presenting ourselves at the Colonial Office, were invited by His Grace the Duke of Buckingham and Chandos, then Secretary of State for the Colonies, to visit him at Stowe, for the purpose of discussing freely and fully the numerous and difficult questions which were involved in the transfer of these great Territories to Canada. We found that His Grace had already made some progress in the preliminaries of a negotiation (under the Act 31 and 32 Vic., Cap. 105) with the Hudson Bay Company, for the surrender to Her Majesty of the Territorial and political rights which they claimed in Rupert's Land.

We objected very earnestly, to some of the demands of the Company, which were communicated to us by His Grace, but after much consideration and important modifications of the Company's demands, we agreed that if they would surrender the Territory on the conditions which His Grace proposed, we would recommend the acceptance of these conditions by the Canadian Government. The Duke of Buckingham's proposals will be found in the letter of Mr. Adderly, of the 1st December, 1868, addressed to the Governor of the Hudson Bay Company.

Considerable delay in the negotiations was occasioned by the retirement from office of the Duke of Buckingham and his Colleagues, and also by the resignation of Lord Kimberly, the then Governor of the Company.

On the 18th of January, 1869, Earl Granville, who had acceded to Office as Secretary of State for the Colonies, transmitted to us the reply of the Company, declining the proposals of the Duke of Buckingham. His Lordship subsequently requested us to communicate to him any observations which we might desire to offer upon this reply of the Company, and upon certain counter proposals which it contained, we felt reluctant, as representatives of Canada, to engage in a controversy with the Company concerning matters of fact, as well as questions of Law and policy, while the negotiation with them was being carried on by the Imperial Government in its own name and of its own authority.

But we did not feel at liberty to decline Lord Granville's request, and, on the 8th February, stated, at length, our views on the various points raised in the letter of Sir Stafford Northcote, the new Governor of the Company, in answer to the proposals of the Duke of Buckingham; we beg to refer Your Excellency to the correspondence for full information as to the positions taken and the opinions expressed by us at this stage of the negotiation.

Lord Granville being of opinion that the rejection, by the Company, of the proposals of his predecessor had terminated the negotiations instituted by him, submitted for our consideration proposals of his own, based on a different principle from that which had been laid down by the Duke of Buckingham.

We feel it our duty to state to his Lordship, that these proposals would not be acceptable to the Canadian Government. They were subsequently modified, and in the form in which they appear in the letter of Sir Frederick Rogers, of the 9th March, were conditionally accepted by us, subject to the approval of your Excellency in Council.

Certain details were left by Lord Granville, to be settled between the representatives of the Company, and ourselves, which lead to interviews and discussions with them, and to a correspondence which is also submitted herewith.

During the progress of the negotiations, a formal complaint was made to the Colonial Secretary by the representatives of the Company, against the Canadian Government for undertaking the construction of a road between Lake of the Woods and the Red River Settlement, without having first obtained the consent of the Company.

The letter conveying this complaint was referred to us by Earl Granville for such explanation as we were able to offer. The correspondence on this subject is also respectfully submitted.

Your Excellency is aware that since our return to Canada, the Hudson Bay Company have signified to Lord Granville their acceptance of the terms, proposed by him, for the surrender to Her Majesty, of their Territorial rights in Rupert's Land. We have, therefore, the honor to submit the same, with memorandums of the "details" agreed to by us on behalf of the Canadian Government, for the approval of your Excellency, and for such action thereupon as your Excellency may be advised to take.

All which is respectfully submitted.

(Signed,)

GEO. ET. CARTIER,
WM. McDougall

Ottawa, May 8th, 1869.

PURCHASE MONEY.

COPY of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 17th August, 1869.

On a memorandum, dated 2nd August, 1869, from the Honorable the Minister of Finance, bringing under the notice of your Excellency in Council the payment of

£300,000 sterling, required to be made to the Hudson Bay Company on the transfer of Rupert's Land to the Dominion of Canada, in terms of the Address to Her Majesty of the Senate and House of Commons in the last Session of Parliament.

The Minister submits that it is proposed that the Proclamation annexing the Territory to the Dominion of Canada shall take effect on the 1st October next, and that it becomes necessary to make provision for the payment of the sum in question on the day mentioned.

That the Canadian Government has no information as to the passing of any Act by the Imperial Parliament, authorizing Her Majesty's Government to guarantee the loan of the sum in question, and although the Dominion has at its disposal sufficient balances out of which the payment might, in the meantime, be met, it is expedient that the assent of Her Majesty's Government should be obtained to any such payment by anticipation in case the arrangements for placing the guaranteed loan on the market, cannot be completed before the 1st October next.

He, therefore, recommends that the attention of Her Majesty's Government be called to these facts, in order that a proper understanding may be come to, either for the advance by this Government of the sum of £300,000, or for its being raised by a loan on the Imperial guarantee.

The Committee concur in the above Report, and advise that a copy thereof be communicated by your Excellency to the Right Honorable the Secretary of State for the Colonies for the information of Her Majesty's Government.

(Certified.)

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk P. C.

Copy of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 18th September, 1869.

The Committee have given their attentive consideration to the annexed memorandum from the Honorable the Minister of Finance, with reference to the requirements of the Act passed at the recent Session of the Imperial Parliament, for guaranteeing a loan of £300,000 sterling to be paid to the Hudson Bay Company, and they report their concurrence in the recommendations of the Minister of Finance, and advise that a copy thereof be transmitted by Your Excellency to Earl Granville for the information of Her Majesty's Government.

(Certified.)

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk, P. C.

FINANCE DEPARTMENT, Ottawa, 18th September, 1869.

The undersigned has the honor to bring under the notice of His Excellency in Council, the Act recently passed by the Imperial Parliament, known as the "Canada (Rupert's Land) Loan Act" of 1869, for guaranteeing a loan of £300,000 sterling, to be paid to the Hudson Bay Company.

That Act provides that Her Majesty's Treasury "shall not give any guarantee unless and until provision is made by an Act of the Parliament of Canada, or otherwise, to "to the satisfaction of the Treasury," among other things for making the loan—with the Sinking Fund, Interest, and any advance made out of the Consolidated Revenue Fund of the United Kingdom on account of such Loan, with the interest thereon, as therein detailed—a charge on the Consolidated Revenue Fund of Canada, immediately after that for fortifications created by the Act 31 Vic. Cap. 41.

That in view of the necessity of making payment to the Hudson Bay Company, previous to the meeting of the Parliament of Canada, and in order that the Proclamation

annexing Rupert's Land to Canada, and the arrangements for the Government and settlement of the Territory may not be unduly deferred, it is expedient to pass a Minute of the Privy Council accepting the terms of the said Imperial Act, which provide for charging the Consolidated Revenue Fund of Canada with the payment of the Sinking Fund, and with the principal or interest on any sum issued out of the Consolidated Revenue Fund of the United Kingdom, all as therein provided, and in the order as therein set forth, and to authorize the negotiation of the loan of \$300,000 on the guarantee of the Imperial Government accordingly; and further, to declare by a like Order in Council that the Government of Canada will recommend to Parliament, at its first Session, the passing of an Act to carry into effect—in so far as provision may not be already made by existing Acts, and by this order—the requirements of the said Canada (Rupert's Land) Loan Act of 1869, as to charging the principal sum of money, and the Interest, Sinking Fund and interest on, and the capital of any advances out of the Consolidated Revenue Fund of the United Kingdom, as therein mentioned, on the Consolidated Revenue Fund of Canada in the order specified in the said Imperial Act.

He further recommends that Thomas Baring, Esq., M. P., and George Carr Glyn, Esq., both of the City of London, Bankers; be nominated Trustees on behalf of the Government of Canada, for the investment and management of the Sinking Fund, and the accumulation thereof, in terms of the said Act.

(Signed,)

JOHN ROSE,
M. of F.

Ottawa, 31st August, 1869.

Copy of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 20th September, 1869.

The Committee have had under consideration the annexed Memorandum, dated 18th September, 1869, from the Honorable the Minister of Finance, having reference to the expediency of paying, forthwith, out of the funds now in the hands of the Canadian Government, the £300,000 payable to the Hudson Bay Company, on the understanding, and for the reasons given in the said Report; and they respectfully request their concurrence therein, and advise that a copy of that Memorandum be transmitted by Your Excellency to the Right Honorable the Secretary of State for the Colonies, for the information and action of H. M. Government.

(Certified.)

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk to the Privy Council.

FINANCE DEPARTMENT, OTTAWA,

20th September, 1869.

On a reference this day to the undersigned, of the despatches from the Secretary of State for the Colonies, the one dated the 22nd July, 1869, and the other dated the 11th August, 1869, transmitted by the Governor General to the Privy Council on the 26th August and 14th September respectively; the latter accompanied by a copy of the Rupert's Land Loan Bill, 1869, and in which the Secretary of State requests to be informed whether any arrangement has been made for the payment of the £300,000 sterling to the Hudson Bay Company; he has the honor to report:—

1st. The Government of Canada is prepared at once to pay the sum to the Hudson Bay Company out of its own moneys; provided that Her Majesty's Government assert that such payment shall not interfere with the granting of the guarantee (by the Commissioners of Her Majesty's Treasury of the amount, but that such guarantee will be given to the

Bonds of Canada, at as early a day as may be arranged) between Her Majesty's Government and the Government of Canada.

2nd. With reference to the despatch of the 22nd July last, in which Earl Granville observes that, in the absence of any Canadian Act authorising the raising of the sum of £300,000, with the usual provisions as to Sinking Fund, it would be impossible to issue the Loan for some months to come, and suggests that such arrangements might be made in the meantime with the Hudson Bay Company touching the payment of the amount, as will enable Her Majesty's Government to issue the Order in Council, annexing the Territories to the Dominion of Canada; the Minister has the honor to state that by a Statute passed by the Parliament of Canada, during the last Session (32 and 33 Vic., cap. 1) it is enacted as follows:

(3.) "The Governor in Council may authorize the raising of a sum of money, not exceeding three hundred thousand pounds sterling, or one million four hundred and sixty thousand dollars, by way of loan, with the guarantee of the Government of the United Kingdom, for the purpose of meeting a like sum, payable out of the Consolidated Revenue Fund to the Hudson Bay Company, as provided in the proposed agreement with the said Company, laid before the Parliament of Canada, with other documents on the same subject, by His Excellency the Governor General, on the Seventeenth of May, in the present year, and embodied in the Address to Her Most Gracious Majesty, adopted by the Senate and House of Commons of Canada.

"And such Loan may be raised either in currency or sterling money, on such terms, for such period, in such form, at such rate of interest, and with such sinking fund, and subject to such conditions as the Governor in Council may think most advisable, with the approval of the Commissioners of Her Majesty's Treasury; and such loan, interest, and sinking fund shall be a charge upon the Consolidated Revenue Fund of Canada.

(4.) "The Governor in Council may authorize the raising, by way of loan, of a further sum, not exceeding in the whole, three hundred thousand pounds sterling, or one million four hundred and sixty thousand dollars, on the credit of the Dominion of Canada, for the purpose of defraying the expense of opening up communication with and of the settlement and administration of the Government of the said Territory; and such Loan may be raised either in currency or sterling money, on such terms, for such period, in such form, at such rate of interest, with such sinking fund and subject to such conditions as the Governor in Council may think most advisable; and such Loan shall be a charge upon the Consolidated Revenue Fund of Canada."

These enactments were intended, by anticipation, to provide for the difficulty which his Lordship has suggested; and the Government of Canada, by further Order in Council, (dated 17th August, 1869) suggested that in order to obviate any delay, the Bonds to be issued under it should be prepared in England, and signed on behalf of the Dominion of Canada by the Financial Agents there, who were, by the same Order in Council, and under the provisions of the Acts, permitting Loans to be effected, specially authorized to sign these Bonds as the Officers of the Dominion of Canada.

The Minister recommends that Earl Granville be informed that the Government is prepared at once to settle the form and mode of executing the Bonds, so that no delay whatever may arise.

3rd. The Minister of Finance has further the honor to state, that by a further report from this Department, dated the 18th September instant, and approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the same day, the Government of Canada accepted the terms of the Rupert's Land Loan Act, 1869, which provides for raising the Loan, and for the creation and management of the Sinking Fund, and for making the various sums specified in that Act, a charge on the Consolidated Revenue of Canada, in the order therein specified; and he trusts that the provisions of the aforesaid Act, and the Order in Council now referred to, give adequate authority for effecting the Loan without further Legislation, and that the requirements of the Canada Rupert's Loan Act, 1869, are sufficiently fulfilled, so as to permit of immediate arrangements being made with the Commissioners of Her Majesty's Treasury, to carry it into effect.

4th. He further recommends that the Financial Agents in England be authorised to determine and make all arrangements with Her Majesty's Government, for creating and maintaining such Sinking Fund as may be thought proper in respect to the guaranteed portion of the Loan ; and also to determine as to the creating and maintaining a Sinking Fund in respect of the further amount of Loan authorised to be issued in terms of the 4th Section of the aforesaid Act ; and the Bonds to be issued therefore may be for such amounts, and payable at such dates, and bear such rate of interest as the said Financial Agents may think most advantageous.

(Signed,)

JOHN ROSE.

Ottawa, September 20th, 1869.

Copy of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 2nd October, 1869.

The Committee of Council have had under consideration the accompanying Memorandum, dated 30th September, 1869, from the Honorab'le the Minister of Justice, recommending that in view of the immediate departure of the Honorable John Ross, late Minister of Finance, for England, he be requested to act on behalf of the Canadian Government on his arrival in London, on the several matters enumerated in the said Memorandum, and they respectfully advise that the recommendations of the Minister of Justice be approved, and that Mr. Rose be duly authorized to act on behalf of the Dominion in the matters referred to.

Certified.

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk to the Privy Council.

The undersigned, in view of the immediate departure of the Honorable John Rose, late Minister of Finance, for England, begs leave to recommend that he be requested to act on behalf of the Canadian Government, on his arrival in London, on the following matters :—

1. To make arrangements with Her Majesty's Government and with the Financial Agents of the Dominion in London, for the negotiation of the Loan of £300,000 sterling, on the guarantee of Her Majesty's Government, for the payment to the Hudson Bay Company ; and also for negotiating such further Loan, on the sole credit of Canada, as may be thought expedient for the other purposes connected with the North West-Territories, contemplated in the Supply Bill of last Session, and referred to in the several Minutes of Council, copies of which are hereunto annexed ; and further to make such arrangements as to the form of execution and signature of the Bonds to be issued as may be thought most convenient.

2. To make provision for the payment in advance, if need be, by arrangement with Her Majesty's Government, of the said sum of £300,000 sterling, out of the Funds of Canada, and to carry out any agreement which it may be necessary to make to that effect, and to adjust, with the Company, the sum to be paid for the Telegraph wire, specified in the arrangements with the Government of Canada.

(Signed,)

JOHN A. MACDONALD.

Ottawa, 30th September, 1869.

COPY of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 16th November, 1869.

On a Memorandum, dated 13th November, 1869, from the Honorable the Minister of Finance, submitting that it is expedient to lose no time in remitting one million five hundred thousand dollars to the London Agents, in order that immediate payment may be made to the Hudson Bay Company, of the purchase money of the Territory, £300,000 sterling.

And further submitting that it is inexpedient to place a new loan on the market at present, and that it will be desirable to postpone raising any further loan until it becomes necessary to raise a further amount for the Intercolonial Railway, stating that the Imperial guaranteed Bonds will be issued when required, and will be an available security on which a temporary Loan can be raised if required.

The Committee advise that the foregoing suggestions of the Minister of Finance be approved and acted on.

Certified.

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk Privy Council.

The Secretary of State to Sir John Young.

(CANADA.—No. 215.)

DOWING STREET,
30th December, 1869.

To Treasury, 5th Nov. 1839. SIR,—I have the honor to transmit to you the enclose copies
Treasury, 22nd Nov. 1839. of a correspondence with the Board of Treasury, relating to the
Loan, £300,000, to be raised by the Government of Canada, for the payment of the
Hudson Bay Company on the cession of their Territories in British North America.

I have, &c.,

(Signed,)

F. R. SANDFORD,
For Earl Granville.

Governor General
The Rt. Hon. Sir JOHN YOUNG, Bart., G.C.B., G.C.M.G., &c., &c., &c.

Sir F. Sandford to Secretary to Treasury.

(Copy.)

DOWNING STREET,
5th November, 1869.

17th August, 1869. SIR,—I am directed by Earl Granville to transmit to you, to be
17th August, 1869. laid before the Lords Commissioners of the Treasury, the several orders
18th September, 1839. noted in the margin, of the Privy Council of Canada, on the subject of
18th September, 1839. the guarantee to be given by their Lordships for the payment of the sum
29th September, 1839. of £300,000, to be raised by way of a loan by the Government of Canada, under the Act
of the last Session of the Imperial Parliament, cap. 101, called "The Canadian (Rupert's
Land) Loan Act, 1869."

I am also desired to transmit, for the information of their Lordships, a copy of an 32 and 33 Vic., cap. 1. Act of the Parliament of Canada, passed in anticipation of the Imperial Act, by which authority would appear to be given to raise the Loan on such terms and conditions as the Governor in Council may think most advisable, with the approbation of the Lords Commissioners of the Treasury.

Mr. Rose, late Finance Minister of Canada, has been authorised to make the necessary arrangements on behalf of the Government of Canada, and has transmitted the accompanying Memorandum to Earl Granville, shewing the mode by which it is proposed that the money, on the guarantee of Her Majesty's Government, should be raised.

It has been arranged that the surrender of Rupert's Land, by the Hudson Bay Company shall be made on the 1st December next. The money will required to be paid on that day, and as it is of great importance that no further delay should take place in the transfer of the Territory to Canada, I am directed to express Lord Granville's hope that the acceptance by the Executive Government of Canada, in the terms of the several Orders in Council accompanying this letter, of the Rupert's Land Loan Act, 1869, and the plan suggested by Mr. Rose, for raising and paying over the money to the Hudson Bay Company, may be satisfactory to their Lordships.

I am, &c.,

F. P. SANDFORD.

The Secretary to the Treasury.

Mr. Stansfeld to the Under Secretary of State., Colonial Office.

(Copy).

TREASURY CHAMBERS,

22nd November, 1869.

SIR,—With reference to your letter of 5th inst., and its enclosure, relative to the Loan of £300,000, to be raised by the Government of Canada for the payment of the Hudson Bay Company on the cession of Rupert's Land, I am directed by the Lords Commissioners of Her Majesty's Treasury to acquaint you, for the information of Earl Granville, that My Lords have had conveyed to Mr. Rose, late Finance Minister for Canada, their approval of the manner in which it is proposed to raise the sum of £300,000, and of terms of the Bond or Debenture.

Mr. Rose has also been informed that My Lords are prepared to guarantee the payment of interest at the rate of 4 per cent. on the said sum of £300,000, in the terms of the Board, on condition that sufficient proof is afforded to the satisfaction of this Board, that that sum has been paid over to the Hudson Bay Company, by, or on behalf of the Government of Canada, and with the understanding that that Government will recommend to the Parliament of Canada, at its first session, the passing of whatever further Act may appear to be called for by a strict interpretation of the provisions of the Imperial Act.

I am to add that My Lords have appointed the Permanent Secretary to carry into effect the guarantee on behalf of this Board, and they propose that Sir F. Rogers and Mr. Law (Auditor of the Civil List) should act as Trustees of the Sinking Fund, on behalf of Her Majesty's Government.

The papers enclosed in your letter of the 5th instant are returned herewith.

I am, &c.,

(Signed,)

JAMES STANSFELD.

The Under Secretary of State, Colonial Office.

SURVEY AND SUB-DIVISION, NORTH-WEST.

COPY of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 23rd September, 1869.

The Committee have had before them the annexed Report, dated 22nd September 1869, from the Honorable the Minister of Public Works, submitting certain documents received by him from J. Stoughton Dennis, Esq., P.L.S., embracing a system proposed by him for the survey and sub-division of the townships in the North-West Territories, and on the recommendation of the Minister of Public Works, they respectfully advise that the system proposed by Colonel Dennis, be approved and adopted.

Certified.

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk to the Privy Council.

OTTAWA, 22nd September, 1869.

(Memorandum.)

The undersigned has the honor to submit,

That on the 10th July last, a letter of instructions was sent to Lieutenant Colonel Dennis, P.L.S., directing him to proceed to the Red River, for the purpose of selecting the most suitable localities for the survey of townships for immediate settlement.

That Mr. Dennis after consulting with the Crown Lands Departments, both in Canada and the United States, in accordance with the above instructions, has forwarded certain papers embracing a proposed system of surveys and sub-division of Public Lands in that part of the Dominion.

1. The system to be rectangular. All townships and sections to be East and West, or North and South.

2. The townships to number northerly from the 49 parallel, and the ranges of townships to number East and West from a given meridian. This meridian to be drawn from the 49 parallel, at a point, say 10 miles West of Pembina, and to be called the Winnipeg meridian.

3. The townships to consist of 64 squares of 800 acres each, and to contain in addition 40 acres, or five per cent. in area in each section, as an allowance for public highways.

4. The townships on the Red and Assiniboine Rivers, where the same have had ranges of farm lots laid out by the Company, to be surveyed, the broken sections butting against the rear limits of such ranges, so as to leave the same intact as independent grants, accompanying which is a map on Mercator's Projection, illustrating the proposed division and a plan of a township, shewing the proposed method of sub-division.

The undersigned now begs to recommend that the above system of surveys and sub-division by Colonel Dennis, P.L.S., for the North-Western Territories, may be adopted and approved.

Respectfully submitted.

(Signed,)

WM. McDougall,
Minister of Public Works.

COPY of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 28th September, 1869.

On the recommendation of the Honorable the Minister of Justice, the Committee advise that the Honorable Wm. McDougall, C. B., be appointed Lieutenant Governor of

the North-West Territories; and that a Commission under the Great Seal do issue, to take effect from and after the day on which such Territories are transferred by Her Majesty to the Dominion of Canada.

And on the same recommendation they advise that Mr. McDougall's Salary, as such Lieutenant Governor, be fixed at seven thousand dollars per annum.

Certified.

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk Privy Council.

COPY of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 28th September, 1869.

The Committee have had under consideration the annexed draft of a letter proposed to be addressed by the Secretary of State for the Provinces to the Honorable William McDougall, as his preliminary instructions on proceeding to the North-West Territories, and on the recommendation of the Honorable the Minister of Justice advise that the same be approved by your Excellency.

Certified.

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk of Privy Council.

(Copy.)

OFFICE OF THE SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE PROVINCES,
28th September, 1869.

The Honorable Wm. McDougall, C. B., Ottawa.

SIR—As you have been appointed Lieutenant Governor of the North-West Territories, in anticipation of the formal transfer of those Territories by Her Majesty to the Dominion of Canada, and as it is expected that such transfer will be made within the course of the next two or three months, I have the honor, by command of His Excellency the Governor General, to inform you that it is desirable that no time should be lost in making the necessary preliminary arrangements for the organization of the Government of the Territories.

2. With this view, I am to instruct you to proceed with all convenient speed to Fort Garry, in order that you may effectually superintend the carrying out of the preliminary arrangements indicated in the preceding paragraph, and be ready to assume the Government of the Territories on their actual transfer to Canada.

3. On your arrival at Fort Garry you will place yourself at once in communication with Mr. McTavish, the Governor of the Hudson Bay Company, and notify him of your appointment, you will at the same time offer seats in your Council to Mr. McTavish and to Mr. Black, or other Chief Judicial Officer of the Hudson's Bay Company, now in the Territory. Should either or both of these gentlemen decline to accept office, you will submit for the consideration of His Excellency, the names of one or two other officers of the Company whom you consider eligible to act as members of your Council. You will at the same time submit the names of several of the residents of character and standing in the Territory, unconnected with the Company, qualified to act as Councillors, giving particulars respecting them, and stating their comparative merits.

4. You will have the goodness to report, with all convenient speed, for the information of His Excellency, on the state of the laws now existing in the Territories, transmitting

copies of any laws, ordinances or regulations of the Company now in force there, together with a full report as to the mode of administering justice, the organization of the Courts, the number and mode of appointment of Justices of the Peace; the Police arrangements and the means adapted for keeping the peace &c.

5. In preparing the Report on the matters referred to in the preceding paragraph, it will be will that you should confer with the Chief Judicial Officer of the Company in the Territories.

6. You will have the goodness to report also upon the system of taxation (if any) now in force in the Territories, *the system of* licencing Shops, Taverns, &c., the mode of regulating or prohibiting the sale of wines, spirituous and malt liquors, and further as to the mode of keeping up the Roads and generally on the Municipal organization, if any, existing in the Territories.

7. You will also make a full report upon the state of the Indian tribes, now in the Territories, their numbers, wants, and claims; the system heretofore pursued by the Hudson Bay Company in dealing with them: accompanied by any suggestions you may desire to offer, with reference to their protection, and the improvement of their condition.

8. You will have the goodness to report, also, on the nature and amount of the currency or circulating medium now employed in the Territories, and of the probable requirements of the Territories in that respect in the future.

9. You will also report on the system of education (if any) which now obtains in the Territories.

10. You will also please to report as to such lands in the Territories as it may be desirable to open up at once for settlement, transmitting a plan of such survey as may be necessary, with an estimate of the cost of survey, a statement of the conditions of grants of land and settlement. The Plan should shew the number of Townships it is proposed to lay out at once, the size and situation of the Townships, and the size of the lots, making the necessary reservation for Churches, Schools, Roads, and other public purposes.

11. You will also report upon the relations at present existing between the Hudson Bay Company and the different religious bodies in the Territories.

12. You will also report as to the number of officers now employed by Hudson Bay Company in the administration of the Government of the Territories, stating the duties and salaries of such officers, and specifying those who should, in your opinion, be retained. You will also report as to the number of persons whom it will be necessary hereafter to employ in the administration of the Government; and you will report generally on all subjects connected with the welfare of the Territories, upon which it may seem to you desirable to communicate with the Government of the Dominion.

13. It is desirable that you should take immediate measures for the extension of the Telegraph System from the Territory to Pembina, and for its connection at that place with the system of the American Telegraph Company or Companies, making any provisional arrangements for that purpose that may be necessary, and forwarding a copy of such arrangements to this Department for confirmation by His Excellency.

I have the honor to be, Sir, &c., &c.,

(Signed,)

E. A. MEREDITH,

U. Secretary of State.

CUSTOMS AND EXCISE LAWS.

Copy of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 28th September, 1869.

On a memorandum, dated 27th September, 1869, from the Honorable the Minister of Justice, acting for the Honorable the Minister of Inland Revenue, and of the Honorable

the Minister of Customs, calling the attention of Your Excellency to the expediency of making early provision for the extension of the Customs and Excise Laws of Canada to the North-West Territories, so soon as they are admitted into the Dominion.

With that view they recommend that the Lieutenant Governor appointed by Your Excellency, be instructed to procure the passing of Ordinance or Ordinances by His Council so soon as it is constituted, making the Customs and Excise Laws of the Dominion operative in the Territories. Such Ordinance or Ordinances to be in force until the said laws are extended to the Territories by the Parliament of Canada.

They further recommend that Mr. Alexander Begg, of the Inland Revenue Office, be instructed to proceed with all reasonable speed to Fort Garry, and that he assume the duties of Collector of Customs and Inspector of Inland Revenue under the said Ordinances. That his travelling expenses be paid, and that his salary be raised from \$800 to \$1,000, to commence from 1st October, 1869.

The Committee submit the above recommendation for Your Excellency's approval.

Certified.

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk P.C.

COPY of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 7th December, 1869:

On a memorandum, dated 3rd December, 1869, from the Honorable the Minister of Finance, submitting that it is expedient to come to an immediate decision as to the final policy to be adopted in Rupert's Land, in the event of that Territory being added to the Dominion of Canada.

That it would, in his opinion, be inexpedient to make any material changes in the Customs Duties in Rupert's Land, until the means of access to the Territory shall have been greatly improved.

He therefore suggests that the present tariff should remain in force for at least two years from the 1st January next. That it may, however, be necessary to establish duties on spirits, and, possibly, some other articles, which are at present exempt.

That if the above suggestion be concurred in, he would further recommend that an announcement of the intention of the Government be made to the people resident in the Territory, who may possibly feel some alarm on the subject of increased duties.

The Committee concur in the Report of the Finance Minister, and submit the same for Your Excellency's approval.

Certified.

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk Privy Council.

COPY of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 11th December, 1869.

The Committee of Council, on the recommendation of the Honorable the Minister of Finance, and for the reasons given in his memorandum of the 11th December instant, advise that the Minute in Council of the 7th instant—having reference to the policy to be adopted in Rupert's Land in the event of that Territory being added to the Dominion—be cancelled.

The Minister of Finance submits that, in his opinion, it is inexpedient to make any material changes in the Customs Duties in Rupert's Land until the means of access to the Territory shall have been greatly improved,

He therefore suggests that the present tariff should remain in force for at least two years from the 1st January next.

That if the above suggestion be concurred in, he would further recommend that an announcement of the intention of the Government be made to the people resident in the Territory, who may possibly feel some alarm on the subject of increased duties.

The Committee concur in the foregoing recommendation, and submit the same for Your Excellency's approval.

Certified.

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk Privy Council.

SEAL, NORTH-WEST TERRITORIES,
GOVERNMENT HOUSE, OTTAWA,

Tuesday, 23rd day of November, 1869.

PRESENT :—*His Excellency the Governor General in Council.*

His Excellency, by and with the advice of the Queen's Privy Council for Canada, and in pursuance of the provisions of the Second Section of the Act 32 and 33 Victoria, Chapter 3, intituled, "An Act for the temporary Government of Rupert's Land and the North-West Territory when united with Canada, has been pleased to order, and it is hereby ordered, that on, from, and after the day on which 'The North-West Territories' shall be admitted into the Union or Dominion of Canada, the said North-West Territories shall, upon all occasions that may be required, use a common Seal, to be called the Great Seal of 'The North West Territories,' which said Seal shall be composed of the Royal Arms, with the legend or inscription 'The Seal of the North-West Territories.'"

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk Privy Council.

COPY of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 18th January, 1870.

On a memorandum, dated 14th January, 1870, from the Honorable the Minister of Public Works, reporting that considerable progress has been made in the roads connecting the navigable reaches on the line of communication between Lake Superior and Red River,—authorized by Your Excellency.

That the route traverses a country as yet uninhabited, and that pending any future arrangements for the conveyance of mails, &c., he recommends that he be authorized to expend the sum of twelve thousand dollars (\$12,000) in the purchase of boats, and the means of conveying them to the places where they are required.

The Committee advise that the required authority be granted.

Certified.

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk, Privy Council.

Copy of a Report of a Committee of the Honorable the Privy Council, approved by His Excellency the Governor General in Council on the 28th January, 1870.

On a memorandum, dated 26th January, 1870, from the Honorable the Postmaster General, reporting that he has entered into an agreement with the owners of the steamer "Chicora" for round trip per week between Collingwood and Fort William, during the season of navigation in the present year; by which agreement the steamer is to convey, in addition to any mails which may be placed on board, such men and stores as the Government may desire to send, at a tariff of prices to be fixed by Your Excellency in Council, in consideration of the payment to the owners of the "Chicora," by the Government of the Dominion, of the sum of Four thousand nine hundred dollars for the season.

He recommends that the above arrangement be confirmed by Your Excellency in Council, and that, inasmuch as the Mail service between Collingwood and Fort William is already provided for by his Department, under contract with the steamer "Algoma," the amount to be paid to Messrs. Milloy, owners of the "Chicora," be placed in the Estimates for the Ocean and River Steam and Packet Service for 1870-71.

The Committee advise that the arrangement made be sanctioned, and that the necessary amount be placed in the Estimates for the present year.

Certified.

WM. H. LEE,
Clerk, Privy Council.
